

④

Please return to: CITIZENS FREEDOM FOUNDATION
WASHINGTON, D.C. AREA
P.O. BOX 113
KENSINGTON, MARYLAND 20795

STATE OF FLORIDA
CITY OF CLEARWATER
PINELLAS COUNTY

CITY OF CLEARWATER COMMISSION HEARINGS RE:
THE CHURCH OF SCIENTOLOGY

Clearwater City Hall
Clearwater, Florida
Saturday, May 8, 1982

RIZMAN COURT REPORTING
18 TREMONT STREET
BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS 02108
(617) 227-1688

1 City of Clearwater City Commission:

2 Charles LeCher, Mayor
3 Thomas Bustin, City Attorney
4 Anthony L. Shoemaker, City Manager
5 Rita Garvey, City Commissioner
6 Paul Hatchett, Vice Mayor
7 James Calderbank, City Commissioner
8 James Berfield, City Commissioner

9 Lucille Williams, City Clerk
10 Sue Lamkin, City Clerk

**CITIZENS FREEDOM FOUNDATION
WASHINGTON, D.C. AREA
P.O. BOX 113
KENSINGTON, MARYLAND 20795**

11 Consultants:

12 Michael J. Flynn, Esquire
13 12 Union Wharf
14 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

15 Thomas Greene, Esquire
16 12 Union Wharf
17 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

18 Thomas Hoffman, Esquire
19 12 Union Wharf
20 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

21 Kevin Flynn
22 12 Union Wharf
23 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

I N D E X

<u>Witness</u>	<u>Page</u>
LaVenda Van Schaick.....	7
Janie Peterson.....	77
Sharon McKee.....	158
Scott Mayer.....	162
Robert Dardano.....	288
Paulette Cooper.....	315
Edward Walters.....	348
John G. Clark, M.D.....	367
Brown McKee.....	396

E X H I B I T S

<u>Number</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>Page</u>
45	Affidavit of Stephen Garritano	77
46	Affidavit of Carole Garrity	156
47	Affidavit of Stan Herrin	287
48	Documents, Project Owl	311
49	Documents, Operation Freakout	314
50	Documents on how to commit burglaries	314
51	Documents on evaluations of covert operations	314
52	Documents on drills	314
53	Organization Chart of the Church of of Scientology	419

I N D E X - ContinuedE X H I B I T S

<u>Number</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>Page</u>
54	Document pertaining to the use of files	419
55	Documents pertaining to the use of auditing information	419
56	A copy of the Judgment in the Article or Device case	419
57	Documents, entitled "Scientology Operations in Clearwater"	420
58	Documents on how to do criminal operations	420
59	Affidavits	420

ooo

1 Clearwater, Florida

2 May 8, 1982

3 Morning Session

4 MR. LeCHER: Commissioners, staff, consultants,
5 members of the audience, those at home, welcome to the
6 fourth day of the hearings, the public hearings, with
7 respect to Scientology. This will probably be our fourth
8 and final day for the City Commission. We do hope that
9 the Scientologists will take advantage of their time,
10 starting Monday, and give their side of the issue and,
11 also, their witnesses. We will be here Monday, antici-
12 pating their presence here.

13 Before we start, I would like to -- I would like
14 to start this meeting with a prayer given by Commissioner
15 Jim Calderbank and then, rise, for the Pledge of
16 Allegiance led by Police Chief, Sidney Klein.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Dear Father, we ask you for the
18 strength and the ability to get through these very diffi-
19 cult times. We ask for your love and also your help in
20 deciding what is the best for the people and the citizens
21 of the City of Clearwater.

22 We hope that we follow your way, and that every
23 day we add a new challenge and we can meet it with great
24 minds and with conviction. Amen.

1 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

2 (Whereupon, the Pledge of Allegiance
3 was recited.)

4 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Flynn, do you have any comments
5 you'd like to make before we start these proceedings?

6 MR. FLYNN: I do, Mayor.

7 Mayor LeCher and members of the Commission, I'd
8 like to make some brief comments about some of the things
9 I stated in my opening that are particularly applicable
10 to the evidence today. And that -- these comments,
11 basically, relate to the purposes of these hearings which
12 are not prosecutorial. We're not here to collect criminal
13 evidence concerning the Church of Scientology in terms of
14 trying to obtain indictments against individuals or of
15 the organization. What we're here to do is to determine
16 whether or not there've been deceptive sales and trade
17 practices in connection with a number of different items
18 of evidence that have been adduced already before this
19 Commission and will continue to be presented today.

20 And those, basically, involve: deception concern-
21 ing Mr. Hubbard's background upon which members have
22 relied or would not have joined if they had known about
23 it; confidentiality of auditing information; deception
24 of purposes, goals, and actions of the organization;

1 deception concerning the article or device warning in
2 the case that I referred to in my opening, which we will
3 be getting in today; and deception concerning legal
4 documents and the legal status of individuals who are
5 entering or leaving the Church; the conditions at the
6 Fort Harrison, both as they actually exist and as they
7 are represented to individuals who are coming to the
8 city; and some issues pertaining to the education of
9 children.

10 With regard to all of those issues, it is important
11 to keep in mind that, in order to prove that the -- or
12 to present sufficient evidence before this Commission
13 that those practices have been taking place, the policies
14 of the corporation have got to be examined and they have
15 got to be examined over a long period of time to determine
16 whether they are sustained policies, policies that not
17 only appear in writing but in practice. And the only
18 appropriate procedure for this Commission to follow to
19 determine whether or not those practices -- or those
20 policies are actually practiced is to determine whether
21 they're standardized and uniform. And the focus of that
22 inquiry is whether or not they have been taking place
23 over a long period of time as applied to a different
24 cross section of people by which this Commission can draw

1 the inference that, in fact, they are uniform policies;
2 they're uniformly practiced in many different locations,
3 including the City of Clearwater; and that they do
4 involve - excuse me - they do involve the deceptive prac-
5 tices about which this Commission is concerned.

6 Thank you.

7 MR. LeCHER: Thank you, Mr. Flynn.

8 Do you have a witness?

9 Will you please be sworn in by the Clerk?

10
11 LaVENDA VAN SCHAICK, a witness herein,
12 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
13 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

14 MR. LeCHER: What is your name, please?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: LaVenda Van Schaick.

16 MR. LeCHER: Miss Van Schaick, I'm going to ask
17 you the same basic, five standard questions I will ask
18 every witness that we will hear in these proceedings.

19 Number one: Are you appearing today to testify
20 under oath voluntarily?

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, I am.

22 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
23 testimony, other than your expenses coming to Clearwater?

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No.

1 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
2 Church of Scientology?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, I do.

4 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have
5 a lawsuit against you?

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Several.

7 MR. LeCHER: Several.

8 Has anyone suggested to you that you should state
9 anything but the truth or has anyone suggested that you
10 change your testimony for any reason?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No.

12 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

13 Would you like to make a statement or would you
14 like to go over what your story is?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I'd like to start -- I don't
16 want to get into the organization, basically, as to what
17 L. Ron Hubbard is because there's a lot of testimony
18 that's already been done on that.

19 Basically, what I want to get into is a brief
20 history. I started in Scientology when I was sixteen
21 years old. I started on staff when I was twenty-one
22 years old. Approximately, nine years of my life went
23 into Scientology. I currently do have a lawsuit against
24 Scientology and they have had several lawsuits against me

1 which are still pending.

2 Fair Game: I've had my house bugged, my telephone
3 bugged. I've had several episodes that have happened to
4 me since I started the lawsuit.

5 My origination of why I got basically into the
6 lawsuit is because: One, the cover up of Quentin's death
7 in Las Vegas, which was L. Ron Hubbard's son, which is
8 still a mystery; two, my brother-in-law shot his brains
9 out with a gun. There are other cases that are similar
10 to that. Three, the misrepresentation of what, actually,
11 Scientology is doing.

12 MR. LeCHER: Would you like to expound on any of
13 these particular points?

14 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Oh, basically, what I relied on
15 when I got into Scientology -- I thought it was like a
16 Vista organization. I was recruited under the deception
17 that we were going to do exploration in Egypt. I thought
18 it was a scientific thing that we were involved in. The
19 fraud that Hubbard was a nuclear physicist and a scientist
20 we were recruited in.

21 There was quite a few of us at that time that were
22 going to school at the University of Las Vegas, and we
23 thought that, basically, what the group was was like
24 Vista, some kind of help organization that was doing

1 research in different areas. We didn't realize what we
2 were getting into.

3 MR. LeCHER: Can you tell us a little more about
4 the misuse of auditing --

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: The first day that I was --

6 MR. LeCHER: -- severing family relations?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: The first day I started court
8 proceedings -- well, actually, before I started court
9 proceedings, my PC folders were sent to the press, plus
10 all the information in my PC folders was sent as public
11 knowledge for anyone to have access to. It has been a
12 lie since day one that your PC folders are confidential.

13 MR. LeCHER: Excuse me. What's a PC folder?

14 MS. VAN SCHAICK: PC folders -- any information
15 that you personally -- if you're upset with your husband,
16 something you did when you were younger, something very --
17 it's anything personal that you have in your life that
18 you wouldn't even, maybe, tell Mom and Dad. It's kind of
19 like sitting down and doing a confession to a Catholic
20 priest, and it's supposed to be very confidential. It is
21 not. It is public information.

22 And that was another one of the originations that
23 actually started it. It is not something -- people that
24 are in Scientology get the idea that your PC folder is

1 confidential; it is not.

2 MR. LeCHER: What kind of relationship did this
3 have on your family?

4 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Divorce, split between the
5 parents - of course, they had me disconnect from my
6 parents - a child, who is now eleven and stabilized, who
7 was very unstable, which is my daughter; relationships
8 between my family -- I was disconnected from my family
9 for so many years, it took me a long time to kind of
10 build it back up again.

11 Oh, how I was made to disconnect is: I was taken
12 by a lady named Pam Bevin to a room and put under audit-
13 ing processes with another gentleman, and it was like -
14 what you would be called - kidnapped. And after thorough
15 processing and getting out of the room that I was in - and
16 this was two weeks, no one else was there but these two
17 people - I disconnected from my entire family. I was
18 told that this was the next process. I removed my money
19 from the bank accounts and gave them all the money that
20 I had.

21 Oh, I signed waivers like most everyone else did,
22 waivers that I would not attack, threaten, or sue Scien-
23 tology.

24 Because I fel that my parents were enemies, I was

1 put through an auditing process to -- my parents were
2 not the kind of people that I wanted around me. And I'd
3 like to also state, with that fact, my mother is a
4 counselor and a psychologist and my father is a retired
5 Methodist minister. And my father had, when he was in
6 the ministry, very briefly, a client come to him that
7 was involved with Mayor Cazares' set up, that told him --

8 MR. LeCHER: That may be considered hearsay.

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: All right.

10 We can't use that for legal reasons.

11 MR. LeCHER: That's a separate issue, and we're not
12 here today to discuss that.

13 MR. FLYNN: It's not only a question of hearsay,
14 but it could be a question of confidentiality of the
15 priest/penitent privilege that is present in the State of
16 Florida.

17 MR. LeCHER: We will not hear that.

18 Can you tell me something about living -- you were
19 in Clearwater at one time, living here?

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, I was.

21 MR. LeCHER: Can you tell me about sanitary con-
22 ditions and the -- they had children and adults, and
23 tell me about how -- what it was like to -- especially,
24 young children, like infants, in the City of Clearwater

1 in the hotel, and conditions of the RPF and the EPF?

2 MS. VAN SCHAICK: At the time I was in Clearwater,
3 there was a hepatitis epidemic that was being covered
4 up, contagious.

5 MR. LeCHER: When was that, please?

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: 1977.

7 Through 1976 and '77, people that were coming from
8 California and the Las Vegas area to Clearwater were
9 coming back very ill. And at that time I had no idea of
10 why, until I got to Clearwater myself.

11 I was in Clearwater for eight weeks. The first day
12 that I got to Clearwater, I became ill because of the
13 food conditions that they had in the hotel. I reported
14 to what they call the Medical Officer, and noticed that
15 downstairs people were getting inoculations for different
16 things. At that time, that second day -- I didn't know
17 until, actually, about three weeks later that there was
18 actually a hepatitis cover up going on.

19 MR. LeCHER: All right, what about the children?

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: The children were kept -- my room
21 happened to be next to the nursery. And the nursery
22 was -- there were two young kids that were, like, thir-
23 teen and fourteen that were watching the children.
24 Because I could hear crying -- the children were separated

1 from the parents and I could -- crying all night long.
2 And being a mother, I made it a habit to look into those
3 things.

4 There was -- the kids were sick: there was flu,
5 there was no -- there wasn't any kind of clean area. The
6 conditions were that all babies that were crying were
7 left in one room to cry because they had reactive minds,
8 and they were considered suppressive babies. And all kids
9 that smiled and that were nice were left in another room.
10 And -- which was really kind of a horrible experience for
11 me as a mother.

12 The other incident was -- another reason why they
13 moved most of the children off of the base at that time
14 is there was a child -- because of where the parking lot
15 was situated at the back of the Fort Harrison, the chil-
16 dren were right next to the parking lot. And a child got
17 out of that area and was killed behind that parking lot
18 area. And that's when they made the decision that they
19 had to move the children: one, because of the publicity
20 that -- and the children are still in the city somewhere.

21 At the time I was there they were making the big
22 move of getting the children out of the Fort Harrison.
23 And the parents that had babies were very upset with the
24 fact, because they only had an hour for lunch and would

1 not be able to see their children because where they were
2 putting the children was an hour and-a-half- to two-hour
3 drive and they couldn't have that hour -- see, parents
4 were allowed one hour for their children at lunchtime,
5 and that was it. And that hour meant that, by the time
6 they got there and had to be back on post again, they
7 couldn't see their children.

8 So, the big upset was that the parents wanted to
9 do something about it, but they actually couldn't. There
10 wasn't -- it wasn't -- the parents got off -- when a lot of
11 the Sea Org. members got off the ship, they started having
12 babies because they were not allowed to have babies when
13 they were on the ship. And as a consequent, you had this
14 overpopulation of small children. There were at least
15 fifteen small babies that were ranged between three or
16 four weeks old and, I think, the oldest was, like, two
17 years old. And there were all young children in one con-
18 fined area.

19 MR. LeCHER: Why were the parents separated from
20 their children? How can a -- I'm not sure I can under-
21 stand a suppressive infant. How do you know --

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Parents --

23 MR. LeCHER: -- an infant is suppressive, simply
24 because he cries?

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah. Or they're going through
2 what's called a PTS; it's called Potential Trouble Source
3 Restimulation. And the way they audit the process is
4 that there -- the child must have somebody suppressive --
5 if it's not the parents, someone in the immediate area
6 that is suppressive to the child. So, he is being
7 restimulated. And so, those children were put into
8 separate rooms and just left to cry. And the basis of it
9 is -- is that the children -- the babies had to handle
10 their own type of thing.

11 And the reason the parents were split is because
12 it's nothing but work, work, work at the Fort Harrison,
13 and the time that they saw their children was dinner
14 break and that's it. And then, if they had liberty on
15 Saturday. You're talking about working fifteen, twenty
16 hours a day, and that's it. And there is no human rela-
17 tionship between the parents, basically. And then, they
18 got separated and -- the idea is to separate you from
19 your family. And if you have children and you have that
20 instinct -- the children are little LRHs as someone pre-
21 viously said.

22 MR. LeCHER: As these children got to be five or six
23 years old, did they attend school, at least the public
24 school system as we know it?

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Some do, some don't.

2 MR. LeCHER: Did they ever, the authorities from
3 the Board of Education, ever question or come by and check
4 on the educational opportunities or mandatory requirements
5 for the children?

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Not while I was there. And I did
7 speak to kids that were the Commodore Messengers that had
8 not attended school.

9 And one of the things why they were removing the
10 children from the area is so the city, particularly,
11 couldn't keep a handle on how many children were being
12 born in Scientology, so, when they became school age,
13 no one would be able to find out whether they should be
14 attending school or not.

15 MR. LeCHER: How was that small child killed that
16 you said was killed in the back --

17 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It was accidentally run over by
18 a car.

19 MR. LeCHER: What about the RPF and the EPF? What
20 was --

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I mean, the two were at the
22 Fort Harrison while I was there, and I saw every single
23 part of the building.

24 The RPF was at -- in the stairwells, the floors, at

1 the very end, not on the upper floors because all the
2 public was on the upper floors, but on the bottom floors
3 at the very far end. It's like a closet cubicle that
4 ten to fifteen people were stacked up on each other.
5 It smelled; it's like a sweatbox; it looked like a small
6 concentration camp.

7 There was, basically -- I tried to talk to someone
8 that was in the RPF - we were old friends - and he
9 couldn't talk to me. They're not allowed to talk, con-
10 stant running, chipping paint -- at that time they were
11 chipping paint off of cement. And when they finished
12 that, someone would come down and drop some more paint
13 on the cement and they would chip paint off of the cement.
14 And that was the big project at that particular time. It
15 was how much paint they could chip off the sidewalks. And
16 this was their major project.

17 And as far as -- it didn't matter whether they were
18 female or men, it was -- the same thing was going on.
19 But the conditions were really gross. No cleanliness,
20 smelled bad. At that time they were wearing all green -
21 and I remember that really stuck out in my mind - and
22 dark blue to signify that we were not allowed as public
23 people to talk to these people. It was just one of the
24 conditions.

1 We were screened when we came in, and we were told
2 that anybody in the RPF was going through heavy condi-
3 tions' orders and were not allowed communication. I had
4 been through a similar thing called EPF in Las Vegas. So,
5 I'm very familiar with this whole process.

6 MR. LeCHER: You were here from almost the
7 beginning -- from the beginning of the existence of the
8 Church of Scientology in Clearwater.

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No. I was in Las Vegas at the
10 time that Clearwater was set up. I was not here at --
11 when Clearwater was -- began.

12 MR. LeCHER: You say, "set up." That was --

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I was in Las Vegas when -- when
14 the Fort Harrison was put here, we got orders in Las
15 Vegas that Fort Harrison was here.

16 MR. LeCHER: I'll ask you the same question I
17 asked at least one other. Maybe you can answer it.

18 Why Clearwater and why did they come under the
19 United Churches of Florida and not what they really are?

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: One of the reasons is you have to
21 look at the area. It's basically an elderly area, very
22 quiet. They figure that the people over a certain age
23 bracket would not stand up and oppose what they were
24 doing. Plus, the area is kind of, you know, a quiet,

1 little city, and they figured that no one in the city
2 would make any kind of outcry. And that, if they did,
3 you know, they could deal with someone over fifty because
4 they think, you know, a few years down the line they were
5 not going to be here and they wouldn't really have to deal
6 with it.

7 MR. LeCHER: They didn't realize that all these
8 people were conservative in nature?

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: They didn't realize the conserva-
10 tiveness that was really in the area.

11 MR. LeCHER: They thought they'd be quiet?

12 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah. They didn't actually see
13 that they would have any problems in this area.

14 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

15 I have a lot more questions, but I would like to
16 ask my colleagues so they have a chance, too. Who did I
17 leave -- who do I start with this morning? Is it Mrs.
18 Garvey?

19 MR. HATCHETT: I was the last one.

20 MR. LeCHER: You were the last one, all right, that
21 I started with? Then, I'll start with you, Mr. Calder-
22 bank.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: LaVenda, thank you for coming.
24 You're very courageous to come here.

1 On the bugging, you said that your phone was
2 bugged?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, it was.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Fair Game Policy?

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It's called Fair Game. It's the
6 same --

7 MR. CALDERBANK: When was that?

8 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, since '79, '80, and '81.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: '79, '80, and '81? How do you know
10 that they were bugged?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: My husband was a cop.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: And he swept the lines?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Mm-mm.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Was it ever reported?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, it was reported several
16 times. In fact, at one point in time in Boston we had
17 the telephone man just take the bugs out of the telephone.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Did they -- did the Church ever
19 tell you that any of this was going on when you came in
20 or while you were a member?

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Oh, that they were bugging?

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Or that the GO was -- or where
23 anybody was involved in this in the Church?

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I am very aware of it because I

1 worked in the Hubbard Communication Office, and I came
2 in to publically tell -- but I was aware through my
3 office of operations happening.

4 There is a witness here that was in the Guardian's
5 Office when they did what's called Operation Shake and
6 Bake against me after I got out. She will be testifying
7 of actual Fair Game that they actually did. She was
8 still into Scientology at the time that they decided to
9 do Fair Game. This is very recent; this is not -- this
10 is in the last two years.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

12 And during your stay in Scientology, and when you
13 first went in, you believed what you had read about Mr.
14 Hubbard?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: As being very sincere.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: You believed he was a scientist,
17 a nuclear physicist --

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Oh, absolutely. We had a full
19 folder of background that he had a degree from, you know,
20 different places and that the guy was -- well, I looked
21 at him as an educated, qualified person. I realize that
22 what we'd gotten is falsified information.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: What was that?

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Oh, basically, when we -- this is

1 quite a few years ago. They've gotten rid of most of
2 this information because -- since the cases have started
3 to be researched about L. Ron Hubbard's degrees. And we
4 found out it was -- oh, in the early years in the brief-
5 ing courses.

6 In the early years, we were told that Ron had a
7 degree as a physicist, that he was a scientist. We
8 found -- I found out later, through doing a lot of
9 research on different universities, that the information
10 that we were told -- that this is not true, that -- we
11 finally came up with an affidavit, which he had part in -
12 I believe it's called, and I may have to correct this -
13 Sequoia University, that he had a degree that he gave
14 himself, which he was notoriously known for giving himself
15 his own certifications.

16 But we were briefed out of the fact -- during those
17 days we were getting -- in every single part of the old
18 books, the old Scientology books, you will find back-
19 grounds on LRH of all these wonderful things that he did.
20 If you notice the new books that are coming out, it's
21 no longer being printed because we became aware, by doing
22 our research, that he did not have these degrees that he
23 professed to have. And those are being eliminated out of
24 the front covers of the books now. They are changing that

1 whole process, and we can put that into evidence if you
2 want to see it; we have the old books here that show that
3 he was supposed to have all these Master degrees --

4 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Calderbank, I'd like -- does that
5 book have --

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah. This book was bought 5/6/82,
7 and for the record, it's Exhibit 28, All About Radiation,
8 where it still has his background, bibliography, claiming
9 his degrees and his education as the major selling point
10 of the book.

11 MR. FLYNN: The witness is getting into some legal
12 conclusions which would probably be better not to get
13 into.

14 But in any event, when we tie all the evidence
15 together at the end with regard to comparison between the
16 old biographies and the new biographies, the representa-
17 tions that are still made and the representations as they
18 have been changed, I believe the evidence will show that
19 the inference of deception can be drawn from the fact that
20 some of the changes - and some changes that have not been
21 made, such as holding himself out as a nuclear physicist
22 on the cover of the new books - will indicate to this
23 Commission that the Church of Scientology has entered
24 into a process whereby they have attempted to alter the

1 language to some degree to cover the basic facts. But
2 the inferences that people like LaVenda Van Schaick and
3 anyone coming to Scientology -- anyone coming to Clear-
4 water can see is that he still has all those degrees,
5 although some of the language has been changed.

6 And when we begin, at the end of these hearings, to
7 draw legal conclusions from the evidence, we will point
8 those documents out to the Commission.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Well, then, I guess to sum up
10 Mr. Hubbard's background: Isn't his background a major
11 point or a major encouragement, representation, for you
12 to spend money on courses?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Did it, in your mind, give
15 credence to the theories and the things that you were
16 going to pay money for?

17 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Would you have spent that money
19 if you had known that the book was written in three months
20 without research, this --

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, I would not.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

23 You talked about the auditing process and how it
24 was used.

1 Were you told it was under confidence?

2 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely. I found out that it
3 was blackmail.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Strictest confidence is how it was
5 sold to you? And what was sold to you --

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely. And it's absolutely
7 blackmail.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: And you said about disconnect,
9 breaking up your family: Were any of these confidential
10 facts used in that process?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, they were.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Were there any scientific guaran-
13 tees given to you about auditing as to what it could
14 cure? Did you -- was it sold to you as helping any of
15 your problems?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. And also medical at that
17 time.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Can you give me a specific medical
19 problem?

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Headaches.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Headaches.

22 Did it cure your headaches?

23 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No. It gave me more headaches.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: When you -- when you were in

1 auditing, did the auditor ever tell you that it could not
2 cure -- specifically tell you that it could not cure any
3 medical illnesses?

4 MS. VAN SCHAICK: In 1979, when my auditor found
5 out that I was leaving Scientology, she made me aware
6 that it did not cure any kind of medical representations.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: But while you were spending money,
8 before in the previous years --

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It was after I ran out of money.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: After you ran out of money.

11 The waivers: Did you understand them when you
12 signed them?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Did they make them out to you to
15 be very legal documents?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: That would be upheld in a court of
18 law if you left --

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, not in that sense. Legal
20 documents as to -- basically, for me to go into the
21 Sea Organization, I had to sign a waiver. It was a con-
22 ditional right to join staff in Las Vegas at that time.

23 Oh, yeah, this is really cute. I signed a billion-
24 year contract and another contract, and they're suing me

1 for contract deception.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: They're now trying to sue --

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah. I'd like -- I wonder what
4 their approach would be if I offered to go back on staff.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: So, you are now being threatened --

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I'm being --

7 MR. CALDERBANK: -- on these waivers --

8 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- sued for breach of contract
9 that I signed.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Now, you said that living con-
11 ditions in the Fort Harrison, while you were there in
12 '77, had a hepatitis epidemic?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: How did you know it was hepatitis?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, one was in the inoculations
16 that they were giving --

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Who gave the inoculations?

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: The Medical Officer did it down-
19 stairs.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you see any degrees on the
21 wall?

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No. There --

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you see any certificates?

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No. Absolutely, she has none

1 whatsoever. She was not a nurse.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: What was her name?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I want to say Mary Jane, but it
4 was Mary Ann something.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: Mary Ann something, okay.

6 And you also said there was an attempt to cover up
7 this epidemic from health officials in the city? How do --

8 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: How do you know that?

10 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It's a combination of things.
11 Our SED came back from Las Vegas with hepatitis, and she
12 was put in an area where -- well, she -- one, she didn't
13 stay SED. She was put -- kind of confined over to another
14 area. At that time she had lost an extreme lot of weight.
15 And I wasn't really aware of what the problem was until
16 I got to Clearwater. And I have seen hepatitis before.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

18 You have firsthand --

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. I know what hepatitis looks
20 like. I've seen people go through that condition of
21 extreme contagious hepatitis.

22 And there was fifteen people downstairs in the
23 Medical Room at that time, and they were separating those
24 people where they put me in -- they wanted to make sure

1 that I - I was a public person then - I didn't get any
2 kind of contact with them at all. So, they were putting
3 me in a separate room, and these people were, like,
4 quarantined. And they were stacked up against the walls.
5 They were just -- it was incoherent, not there, very ill.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: And how was the --

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Because I had ended up in an
8 Ethnic situation, talking with Laura Anderson at that time,
9 the Medical Officer at that time -- I had gotten a -- I
10 don't know if it was food or the water; the water was
11 very poor. I had gotten an infection in my mouth at tha
12 time. And the water that, apparently, was coming to my
13 room was not really clean.

14 And the Medical Officer gave me alcohol and she
15 told me to rinse my mouth out with alcohol and then swallow
16 it. And I can imagine what the effects would have --
17 luckily, I happened to take a whiff of the stuff before
18 that occurred. And that's when I got into the discussion
19 of what was happening with Ron with the particular
20 people. Of course, it's not discussed.

21 And then, I heard rumor with other staff talking
22 about it. They couldn't talk about it.

23 I found out later from someone that's involved in
24 my litigation, legally, that that's exactly what was

1 occurring. It was my own guess.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: The Medical Officer, then, pre-
3 scribed a treatment that you knew was harmful to you,
4 swallowing alcohol, denatured alcohol?

5 The children in Scientology --

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. I'll answer that, yes.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: The children were supervised by a
8 minor, a thirteen year-old, twelve --

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Thirteen or fourteen year-old.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: And they had many children that
11 they were taking care of?

12 MS. VAN SCHAICK: There was fifteen at that time.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Fifteen was --

14 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Or more.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: Was this --

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I --

17 MR. CALDERBANK: -- their job?

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: This was their job.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: And they had -- how long were
20 they there supervising, approximately, these minors or --

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, the kids were not allowed
22 in any public areas: one, because they were dirty --

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Dirty?

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- and it was bad public rela-

1 tions as far as people that were coming in and taking
2 courses. And this was one of the real upsets because
3 you got a mother that would come in and say, "Oh, well,
4 where's the nursery at?" And, you know, she proceeded
5 back into the nursery to see how the Sea Org. children
6 were doing, and it was a constant problem. Because
7 being a mother, they -- you know, living a normal life,
8 just coming in as a public person and seeing the con-
9 ditions of the children always was a continual upset on
10 Flag, Clearwater.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Would you characterize the living
12 quarters as sanitary or unsanitary?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Very unsanitary. There was --
14 there were diapers on the floor; the kids had -- the
15 babies had rashes from not being cleaned and changed on
16 a regular basis; runny noses; most of them had flu. They
17 were really sick.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: And would you say these children
19 were supervised by someone well trained in the area or
20 by the minors?

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, I have to answer that
22 honestly. I think that there was one fourteen year-old
23 that was very capable of handling the children. She had
24 too many to handle, unfortunately.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: You never saw a child go to school,
2 though, a public school?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, never.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Why is that?

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Because school is society.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Is that what -- how would you
7 refer to that as the Church's -- did the Church say that
8 directly, that the school is not good for their children?

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: When my daughter was younger in
10 Las Vegas, the only reason that she was sent to public
11 school was because the public school system in Las Vegas
12 was required for the children in the Las Vegas area. And
13 the Guardian's Office, because they didn't want a stink
14 at that time, said that we had to put our children in
15 school, or my daughter would have never attended school.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: So, you -- would it be a policy
17 of the Church to prevent children from going to public
18 schools?

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Other than Apple Schools or
20 schools that have to do with Scientology.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

22 You mentioned Quentin Hubbard's death. You said
23 there was some questionable surroundings about that.

24 Do any of those surroundings pertain to Clearwater

1 at all?

2 MS. VAN SCHAICK: He left Clearwater. He died in
3 Las Vegas.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: And your brother-in-law, you
5 mentioned that he got -- the R 245 process, and that your
6 brother-in-law was found shot to death?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: He was found dead in his room
8 with a .45, with a gunshot -- with a gunshot wound to his
9 head.

10 MR. LeCHER: Would you like to --

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: The result of David's death has
12 never really been -- David was doing some different
13 things for the operation of the Guardian's Office in Las
14 Vegas. And at the time that the police found him, he
15 was found with a .45 and a suicide note. He had written
16 a letter to my parents; he was married to my sister. And
17 the last letter he had written was how wonderful Scien-
18 tology was, and he was doing a little mission and -- any-
19 way, the result of David's death put my sister under
20 psychiatric care and things have been basically the same
21 since then.

22 I don't think it will be probably the first or
23 the last incident that will be uncovered through the next
24 few years, and if people really kind of wise up and look

1 at what's going on -- I think the only questions that
2 could really be answered on Quentin or David's death
3 would be Artie Maren, and it would be really nice if
4 Artie appeared at these hearings.

5 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

6 Mr. Berfield, do you have any questions -- if you
7 are finished, Mr. Calderbank?

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Yes.

9 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield.

10 MR. BERFIELD: Yes, ma'am. I have a couple of
11 questions here: You said that you had a suit that was
12 pending against Scientology; is that correct?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: That's correct.

14 MR. BERFIELD: Did you sue them first or did they
15 sue you first?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Who attacked who first? They
17 attacked me first.

18 MR. BERFIELD: By "attacking," do --

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Who sued first? I sued first.

20 MR. BERFIELD: We -- one of our local newspapers,
21 in this morning's newspaper, have kind of led to believe
22 that maybe we have not been drilling you people thorough-
23 ly enough to establish the authenticity of your state-
24 ments.

1 I thought we had, personally. I think that our
2 interest is so deep in Clearwater, but I must ask this
3 question, even under extreme emotional conditions: Did
4 you come because you wanted to be vindictive towards
5 the Scientologists or -- or what is your purpose in
6 being here?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, absolutely not.

8 I care about the people that are down at the Fort
9 Harrison. I would really like to see them straighten up
10 their act. I would like to see kids get an education,
11 which I feel that they deserve. I would like to see the
12 dirty tricks stopped. And I genuinely would like for
13 the people that are in the Fort Harrison to realize that
14 people that are involved in my case or their own personal
15 cases genuinely care about what's happening with those
16 people. And basically, just trying to let them know
17 there are other things that are going on.

18 A lot of times -- they don't want to find out about
19 it unless a hearing like this actually happens. And
20 because you have so many different Scientologists in so
21 many different areas that one may not be aware of what's
22 happening in Los Angeles or in other areas.

23 My intention was never to be vindictive against
24 Clearwater. My intention was just to actually expose the

1 truth, and if they can handle the truth, fine.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Now, you earlier made some state-
3 ments about misrepresentations; Mr. Calderbank went over
4 them pretty well.

5 But when you use the word "misrepresentation," what
6 does that mean to you?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: They're representing themselves
8 as a religious organization.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Exclude the religion.

10 MS. VAN SCHAICK: As far as auditing processes?

11 MR. BERFIELD: Yes, ma'am.

12 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Auditing processes are supposed
13 to be confidential; they are not. You walk -- you go in
14 with the attitude that you are -- that your personal life
15 will be private. That is not true. Your personal life,
16 once you leave, is totally exposed to the press, exposed
17 to other family members. It's an exposure to your hus-
18 band, an exposure to anyone that wants to see it.

19 MR. BERFIELD: I realize I'm asking the opinion of
20 a layperson, but, in your opinion, the living conditions
21 at the Fort Harrison -- is there a health problem there?

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: There was a health problem when
23 I was there. Whether there are -- is now -- I have not
24 been to the Fort Harrison in over three years now.

1 MR. BERFIELD: I also understand -- strike that.

2 These technologies: the Fair Game, the Blown
3 Student, what have you -- the last time you had contact
4 with Scientology, were those still in effect?

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely. They never changed
6 from day one.

7 MR. BERFIELD: One of the biggest questions I've
8 been asked by people - and it would appear to be well
9 above average - what would cause a person to go into
10 Scientology?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I think all people that come in
12 have an inner nature of genuine caring about other people.
13 I think people that get in the organization usually are
14 people that should go into the service or Vista or Red
15 Cross or -- they're people that I consider that have
16 what's called a help instinct.

17 MR. BERFIELD: Okay.

18 Now --

19 MR. FLYNN: Mr. Berfield, I understood that ques-
20 tion to be calling for her opinion as to what she thinks
21 the inner reasons are and not to be a question of the
22 type: what representations were made to her at the out-
23 set that induced her to go in, but her inner feelings
24 that she experienced as one of the motivating factors.

1 MR. BERFIELD: That was a general question, and
2 the next one is going to be more specific as to what
3 motivated you to go into it?

4 MR. FLYNN: What representations did she --

5 MR. BERFIELD: What representations --

6 MR. FLYNN: -- rely on or --

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Representations of how -- well,
8 L. Ron Hubbard's background and what the group stood for.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Now, you stayed in, roughly, nine
10 years; is that correct?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: That's correct.

12 MR. BERFIELD: Somewhere along the line, did you
13 come to the conclusion that these representations were
14 not correct or true or --

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: That's when I got out.

16 MR. BERFIELD: Did this happen at the very end or
17 did you have doubts along the line or what?

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I don't understand the question.

19 MR. BERFIELD: Well --

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: You mean, did I doubt on and
21 off --

22 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

23 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- down the line when I was in?
24 Yes.

1 I didn't have the mental stability at that time to
2 get out. I couldn't get out.

3 MR. BERFIELD: What do you mean you couldn't get
4 out?

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I was so indoctrinated with the
6 whole group that I mentally couldn't bring myself to
7 getting out. I couldn't get out.

8 MR. BERFIELD: Could I interpret that that you're
9 saying that they had control over your mind --

10 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

11 MR. BERFIELD: The courses that you last -- you
12 audited courses here in Clearwater; is that correct?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, I did.

14 MR. BERFIELD: Those courses that you last audited
15 here or took here in Clearwater, how would you define
16 those in layman's terms? Were they true courses or were
17 they misrepresented or what?

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It's interesting. The courses
19 I took here were what is called the Hubbard Communication
20 Ethics Officer. And basically, what that is is to
21 establish ethics in the community and to have the organi-
22 zation run on a very ethical process.

23 And I realized that, after I finished the whole
24 course, that's not what was being represented in Clear-

1 water. I took a course that was totally false.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know the meaning of the word,
3 "Dianetics"?

4 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. Dianetics is through the
5 mind. That's exactly what it is: it's through the mind.
6 Through the mind you get --

7 MR. BERFIELD: This is a little off the subject,
8 but it goes along the line. I noticed in the same morn-
9 ing's paper that I was reading, that the City of Austin,
10 Texas was requesting that they declare a day of Dianetics.

11 Do you think Clearwater ought to declare a day of
12 Dianetics? I mean --

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Almost every other city has.

14 MR. BERFIELD: Why?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, it's public relations. It's
16 a great way to get the public interested in to what they
17 consider very good public relations, and get city and
18 government officials thinking that they are very -- you
19 know, "We're just the nice guys." It's -- it's what's
20 called a big scam, by promoting to agencies, special
21 politics, and press that they are the nice guys, when
22 they are not the nice guys.

23 MR. BERFIELD: I have just two other questions here
24 I'd like to ask you.

1. You have heard some of the testimony that has been
2 given here; is that correct?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

4 MR. BERFIELD: In your mind as a layman, do you feel
5 that we have been fair in attempting to detect the truth
6 about Scientology?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. I'd like to hear the other
8 side. I hope the other side comes and appears, I really
9 do. It -- it's -- I don't want this to be a one-sided
10 session. I hope that they do show up and they do appear.

11 But I want them -- it's too bad that they couldn't
12 let the staff of the Fort Harrison sit in on these pro-
13 ceedings. Of course, the staff is told not to read news-
14 papers or communicate with anyone that's left Scientology.
15 And I would really have liked the whole staff to have
16 attended this, because I consider it a Committee of Evi-
17 dence and I'm sure the staff would understand that.

18 MR. BERFIELD: One last question, and I ask this of
19 everyone -- you answered the Mayor's question as to why
20 Scientology moved here.

21 But if you could tell the people of Clearwater just
22 one thing or a short statement as to what they should be
23 looking at, what would you say to them?

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Just be careful of the nice guy

1 that's smiling on the outside, extending his hand with
2 good public relations, because you'll find out in the
3 long run, when your own personal life is exposed some
4 way to that individual - and they have ways of finding
5 out those things - you will find out that it will be used
6 against you.

7 MR. BERFIELD: When you use the word "nice guy,"
8 could you be just a little more specific?

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I -- I'm talking about people
10 that are currently in the Guardian's Office at the Fort
11 Harrison. They're creating an image of -- that they are
12 going to be nice guys now. It's interesting that a
13 religion has been not a nice guy for a long time.

14 MR. BERFIELD: Well, let's stay away from --

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: All right. Well, whatever, an
16 organization has not been a -- they have not -- they have
17 not represented what they really are.

18 I am glad that the hearing is here because there are
19 people that are out of Scientology that are trying to
20 represent to the press and to people exactly what they
21 are. And it's, like, the only reason the witnesses are
22 here at this time -- we were in for a long time, we know
23 how things are covered up, we know exactly what is going
24 on. And no matter how nice that they say they are being

1 as an organization, I believe that for about two days,
2 and that's my extent of it. And it's just a nice front
3 that changes and it will go back to exactly what it has
4 always been, no matter what kind of public relations
5 that they put out to press or put out to anyone else.

6 I have not seen that dramatic of a change in the
7 organization, and I don't personally believe them. And
8 anyone else that does, that's entirely up to them.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Thank you.

10 MR. LeCHER: Just as an aside before Mrs. Garvey,
11 we're hoping that Scientologists would participate in
12 these -- Scientologists are taping this entire four days.
13 And I hope that they will show it to their people within
14 the organization at an opportune time and they bring
15 them all up here from the Fort Harrison.

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I doubt that staff will ever see
17 this film --

18 MR. LeCHER: Well, they --

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- other than the Guardian's
20 Office. And that's really unfortunate. Other than when
21 they're splicing something, I doubt that staff will see
22 this film.

23 MR. LeCHER: They are here and taping it verbatim.

24 Mrs. Garvey.

1 MRS. GARVEY: Miss Van Schaick, you said you were
2 here in Clearwater in '76?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Mm-mm.

4 MRS. GARVEY: What period, what month were you --

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It was in the summer. It was --
6 let's see, it was May or June, just before it started to
7 get real hot.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Okay, because there are a lot of hot
9 months.

10 You left the organization in '79; is that right?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: That's right.

12 MRS. GARVEY: You made an interesting comment about
13 that, when you came to Clearwater, you made a tour of the
14 Fort Harrison.

15 Why would you make a tour of the Fort Harrison?
16 Is that your standard policy when you go someplace to
17 make a tour --

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I was ethics-trained in the
19 organization, and standard policy from someone that's
20 ethics-trained is, basically, just to see what's going on in
21 the area. It's the way I was programmed for so many
22 years.

23 MRS. GARVEY: Well, I think it's interesting that
24 you're the first one that ever really knew what was going

1 on. They never went beyond their room and their training,
2 it seems.

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I -- yeah, I had kind of a free-
4 dom in the Fort Harrison, see, I had been in for years.
5 And being that I was taking an ethics course --

6 MRS. GARVEY: They didn't doubt that you would
7 ever question --

8 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah, that I would never question
9 what was going on. Basically, they didn't think -- and
10 definitely that I would report it. I mean, the course
11 that I was taking was ethics. So, someone's that taking
12 those kind of courses surely wouldn't go around to the
13 press or anybody and expound on what's going on.

14 MRS. GARVEY: You also made comment that you were
15 part of the Sea Organization. And yet, you came here as
16 a public person?

17 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah. I was in Sea Org. and
18 changed my contract because I was working for the Mission
19 of the Meadows. And when you work for a mission, you
20 sign a regular contract instead of the Sea Org. contract.

21 MRS. GARVEY: Your billion-year contract --

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Right. See, they cancelled our
23 billion-year contracts in - this is going to sound out-
24 rageous - Las Vegas because we didn't have a ship we

1 could stick in the middle of the desert and do what --
2 we didn't have a ship. But we had to go to what was
3 called Project 0 at that time, and we had this little
4 rowboat in this lake out in Lake Mead.

5 Anyway, they had to cancel our Sea Org. contracts
6 in Las Vegas, basically, because we couldn't go through
7 this ship training because there was no ship. You can't
8 put a ship in the desert.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Well, how do they go through this
10 sea training in Clearwater?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, they have the ship there.
12 The objective was -- is the Apollo and the Excalibur were
13 here in port at different times, and they were going to
14 take each staff member from the Fort Harrison and go
15 through what's called this Project 0. Then, in Los
16 Angeles, they also had the ships off port there. So, you
17 could go through regular sea training duty. But we
18 weren't capable of putting a ship in the desert, so we
19 had our Sea Org. contracts cancelled.

20 MRS. GARVEY: What is -- so, if you were a public
21 person, the living conditions that you lived in were fine?

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I had my own room to myself.

23 MRS. GARVEY: Did you go into any of the staff
24 rooms or their living quarters?

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: The only staff that I was in was
2 Executive Staff.

3 MRS. GARVEY: Which would have been --

4 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Would have been the same kind of
5 quarters as mine. Either they had their own room -- other
6 than I walked into where the RPF was downstairs. That
7 was --

8 MRS. GARVEY: That was a small, closet-type area
9 with fifteen bunks, which you said earlier?

10 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah, people just stacked up
11 sleeping.

12 MRS. GARVEY: What about -- was there anything in
13 the garage at that time? We were told earlier that
14 that's where dorms were. Did you get to the garage?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: That was -- that was their dorm.

16 MRS. GARVEY: Oh, that long room. It only had
17 fifteen. We were earlier told that it had fifty-four.

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Oh, in the dorms down -- see,
19 each -- the way they have the rooms set up, the -- there
20 was different kinds of staff there. There was staff
21 there just for public that had money. Then, there was
22 staff for the staff. And there was seven different orgs.
23 at that time -- seven different organizations operating
24 at that particular time.

1 There was a Guardian's Office and then there was
2 public -- it's a very complicated -- I don't want to get
3 into all the organization details. But -- yeah, it would
4 take too long anyway.

5 The staff there basically had -- some of them had
6 their own rooms, some were sharing rooms. The ones that
7 were single -- I couldn't have told you how many staff
8 at that particular time. There was, probably, I think,
9 about three hundred and fifty staff operating.

10 MRS. GARVEY: Executive staff or --

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: All staff. I'm talking about
12 all staff. And then, it varied between three hundred
13 fifty and four hundred at that time.

14 MRS. GARVEY: What was -- what were you told about
15 the Guardian Office when you first joined?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: That it was a protective organi-
17 zation part of Scientology.

18 MRS. GARVEY: In the outline we were given, there's
19 a comment about illegal aliens that are working in the
20 Fort Harrison.

21 Would you elaborate a little bit more on --

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I can't get into it because of
23 legal reasons --

24 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- right now.

2 MRS. GARVEY: Were -- through the years that you
3 were there, what were you promised, or what guarantees
4 were you given when you continued auditing?

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, basically, that I would
6 have no more problems. That -- that's just a very simple
7 basic.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Did you have any encounter with a
9 blown student?

10 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, I did.

11 MRS. GARVEY: Someone that was physically brought
12 back?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. I have physically brought
14 back people myself.

15 MRS. GARVEY: You have?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes.

17 MRS. GARVEY: You made comment --

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I can't get into that.

19 MRS. GARVEY: I'm not -- I just -- okay.

20 You made comment that --

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I --

22 MRS. GARVEY: -- you were in the --

23 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Okay.

24 I can testify to that.

1 MRS. GARVEY: You can?

2 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah.

3 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

4 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I'm trying to stay away from my
5 case.

6 There were several incidents where I had to go out
7 and get blown staff members because I handled that par-
8 ticular area, and whatever it took at that time, you
9 know, if we had to bodily set the guy in the car to bring
10 him back. And I brought back, oh, I guess, through the
11 years, probably -- I don't know, maybe, different times
12 where we had to stick somebody in a car to bring them
13 back to base.

14 MRS. GARVEY: What happened -- do you -- are you
15 aware of what happened to that blown student, once he
16 came back to base?

17 MS. VAN SCHAICK: As far as basic, on RPF.

18 Are you talking about a student or a staff member?

19 MRS. GARVEY: Whoever that was --

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, people that were public
21 persons that maybe would leave the course or would not be there
22 for a while were not RPFed.

23 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

24 It was just staff; that was all?

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: People with money were not RPFed.
2 And that's the --

3 MRS. GARVEY: Subjected to it.

4 What's the -- you mentioned you were in EPF.

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It's the same as RPF. It's
6 Estate Project Force.

7 We -- we laid carpet and painted walls.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Why were you in the EPF? I'm just
9 trying to establish whether this is a standard policy of
10 the --

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Briefly, because I had an upset
12 with an executive in the organization, and -- well, I've
13 been in EPF several different instances.

14 The one that I can probably expound on the most
15 was: I disagreed with the fact that Barbara Glass wanted
16 to leave my five year old locked up in the building by
17 herself and leave her there. And I did it -- that was
18 the first time -- that was one of the last times I
19 actually got EPF, because I got in a fight with an
20 executive officer because I refused to let them lock
21 my child up for any reason.

22 MRS. GARVEY: I can see why you blew.

23 Your husband isn't a Scientologist or --

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, he's not.

1 MRS. GARVEY: He's not.

2 I can't think of anything else I was going to ask.

3 MR. LeCHER: Mr. --

4 MRS. GARVEY: Oh, freeloader's debt.

5 Were you charged a freeloader's debt when you left?

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: It was something enormous. I
7 think it was twenty-two thousand dollars I was charged
8 after I worked fifteen hours a day, seven days a week.

9 MRS. GARVEY: You were here in '77.

10 Did that not give you a feeling that there was
11 something wrong?

12 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. That actually reminds me
13 of my experience in being at Clearwater. I knew definite-
14 ly something was wrong.

15 MRS. GARVEY: But you still weren't able to leave?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Not until almost a year later. I
17 didn't pull things really together until almost a year
18 after that.

19 MRS. GARVEY: Thank you.

20 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hatchett.

21 MR. HATCHETT: I only have two questions.

22 You spoke in terms of that child that was acci-
23 dentally killed in the parking lot.

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes.

1 MR. HATCHETT: Did you actually witness that your-
2 self?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, I did not.

4 MR. HATCHETT: How close did you know that the
5 evidence may have been true? Did someone tell you or --

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Someone told me. And there was
7 a lot of uproar at that --

8 MR. HATCHETT: Okay.

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Just before I got there, there
10 was a lot of uproar going on. And that's when the whole
11 change came about that all the children had to be removed
12 from the Fort Harrison.

13 MR. HATCHETT: And where did they place them?

14 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Good question.

15 MR. LeCHER: What was the question, Mr. Hatchett?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Where did they place the children?

17 MR. HATCHETT: Where did they place the children --

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I --

19 MR. HATCHETT: -- after they moved them from the
20 Fort Harrison?

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I have no idea.

22 MR. HATCHETT: But you knew where yours was?

23 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Mine was with me, thank God.

24 MR. HATCHETT: I mean, during this time.

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Mine was not, thank God, in
2 Clearwater at that time.

3 MR. LeCHER: Will you ask her if the death of the
4 child was ever reported to the police?

5 MR. HATCHETT: Good question.

6 Was the death of the child ever reported?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I -- as far as I know, no.

8 MR. HATCHETT: To establish whether or not the
9 Guardian's Office was finally repulsed: When they used
10 Shake and Bake against you -- is that the correct term?

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes. It's called Shake and Bake.

12 MR. HATCHETT: All right.

13 Did -- were you aware if this was a written policy?

14 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, I wasn't aware of, really,
15 Shake and Bake until somebody actually left the Guardian's
16 Office that told me. I know what they had done to me.
17 Shake and Bake was the name of what they were doing to
18 me.

19 MR. HATCHETT: Can you describe what Shake and Bake
20 is?

21 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, I received two -- two
22 different incidents. One was a setup where I -- I was
23 told by Pam Bevin that she had cancer, so I was to go
24 and get prescriptions of pills at a motel for her cancer,

1 not realizing at the time that they were taking photo-
2 graphs of me outside the motel and that there was some
3 people upstairs in a room that looked like me that stayed
4 in the motel to throw a big scene, like, there was an
5 orgy happening upstairs in the motel.

6 Now, that was not an incident that they completed
7 because I became aware -- or it was, like, a few -- I
8 became aware that in the motel that something was going
9 on, there was a setup. So, we got people out there to
10 the motel. Of course, there was some Scientologists
11 checked into the motel that disappeared right out. They
12 just totally disappeared out of the motel.

13 The other one was was that -- an incident when they
14 sent a gentleman by the name of Barry Clinger to me to
15 say things that might upset -- that my husband was having
16 affairs, that my attorney was working with the CIA, that
17 I should get rid of my attorney. And I stole that docu-
18 ment that he had written out from the Guardian's Office,
19 which is public evidence in my case.

20 Oh, by the way, Pam Bevin was my auditor and was
21 also responsible -- she was also the person that was in
22 charge of setting me up. It -- it's ironic that they
23 stick your auditor, the person that you give all your
24 personal information to, as your key person to attack you

1 after you get out. They have all of your personal infor-
2 mation about you.

3 I don't think that I'll be the last case that they
4 use that with.

5 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you.

6 MR. LeCHER: Do you have any questions, Mr.
7 Shoemaker?

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: I just have one: It's my under-
9 standing that you were physically detained?

10 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yes, I was.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: Could you explain that a little
12 bit, please, what happened?

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I was brought to a room --

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: Can you give the date, please?

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: What's the date? It was in
16 1974, February.

17 And the house I've since located. It's out in the
18 middle of the desert in Las Vegas. It was Pam Bevin and
19 another guy; I still don't know the guy's name at that
20 time.

21 Basically, I was stuck under heavy auditing pro-
22 cesses.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Was there something leading up to
24 this as to why --

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Money. I had money in an account,
2 and they, basically, wanted the money I had in the
3 account.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Were you -- you were actually
5 locked up and were not allowed to leave during this --

6 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I was not allowed to leave.
7 Whether the front door was constantly locked twenty-four
8 hours a day, I could not answer you that question because
9 I stayed in one room, the bedroom. So, I don't -- you
10 know, I -- if -- if it was or not, I was not coherent
11 enough because I felt like I was really drugged out quit
12 a period of time. I was not home at all.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: A while ago you made a comment about
14 PR, or that that -- I think you said, "It was just PR,
15 public relations," relating to a question.

16 Did you -- are there procedures that are established
17 relating to public relations in terms of how these things
18 are dealt with with people outside of the organization?

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Any time there's bad press or
20 an ex-Scientologist reporting the truth, they do a whole
21 campaign to show what a nice guy they are: open house,
22 they clean up their act, basically. And until press --
23 and when press dies down and other people like myself
24 that are ex-Scientologists go back to their normal lives,

1 they say -- it's kind of like a joke to them.

2 It's -- we've done this -- I did this several
3 times in Las Vegas with city officials there in Las Vegas.
4 Any time we had kind of an upset, we'd go through a
5 cleaning house and we'd remove our children to different
6 places. And it happens in every Scientology organization
7 across the United States.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: And you personally had firsthand
9 knowledge of this occurring? I mean, you actually par-
10 ticipated --

11 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I've done -- we've done a cleanup
12 in Las Vegas.

13 And at the time that I was on Flag, they were doing
14 a cleanup with the children, moving the children out of
15 the area.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

17 MR. LeCHER: Going back to that child that was run
18 over, I have no reason to believe that it certainly was --
19 I'm sure it was an accident, but you don't know that it
20 was reported or you say you don't think it was reported
21 to the police?

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I don't know whether it was
23 reported or not. The child was only, like, two years
24 old.

1 MR. LeCHER: Do you know the name of the child?

2 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah, but I'm afraid because of
3 my lawsuit.

4 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I don't --

6 MR. FLYNN: On this particular issue, for the
7 information of the Commission, we have been investigating
8 it for some time. I've had some conversations with one
9 or two city officials about it, and I can say that it --
10 my office is currently investigating it. There is a
11 person who has some knowledge about the subject. And
12 at the time, however, our investigatory efforts are
13 inconclusive.

14 MR. LeCHER: You contributed a lot of money and
15 the organization received a lot of money.

16 Do you know what the money went for? Apparently,
17 you weren't -- they were not -- I will not speculate.
18 What did the money go for?

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: What did it go to?

20 MR. LeCHER: They took in millions of dollars a
21 week, certainly, millions a year in Clearwater. Where
22 did all that money go?

23 MS. VAN SCHAICK: So L. Ron Hubbard could live
24 very comfortably and the executive staff could live very

1 comfortably. That's my assumption.

2 I haven't seen money go back to staff. And I'm
3 sure that staff, currently, at the Fort Harrison, if
4 they'd ever sit down and look at their CGI, or their
5 gross income, and ask themselves the question as to
6 where really all this money is going, they would probably --
7 if they really studied their income policies really
8 closely, they would find out that it's not definitely
9 going back to the staff, and it's not going back into
10 what they think that it's going back into.

11 I would say it's going into people's pockets.

12 MR. LeCHER: Well, these allegations and -- or
13 question -- why did it take you so long to start raising
14 these questions in your own mind? Why did it take you so
15 long?

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: After nine years? I was indoc-
17 trinated with one thing, and you tend to believe that
18 one thing.

19 The only thing I can say is I've been out for over
20 three years now, and it's only three -- it's only until
21 the last year I can see my life is normal for me. It's
22 a mental -- you become a mental cripple, and you're
23 terrified with the fact that, if you leave, your life
24 will be exposed, I mean, kind of a public board.

1 There are things that people all personally hide,
2 you know, whether it's their first kiss with a boyfriend
3 or -- they -- you all keep very personal and private
4 things in your life. And those things are all given to
5 your auditor.

6 And there's nothing that they could personally do
7 to me. My life is public record. And it's like, how
8 many people sitting in this courtroom would like their
9 life public record?

10 MR. LeCHER: Did you continue to receive auditing
11 after you learned the information would be made public?

12 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Oh, no. I have not received any
13 auditing --

14 MR. LeCHER: No. When you were within the organi-
15 zation and you knew that information could be used against
16 you, did you continue to receive auditing in spite of the
17 fact you knew that?

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No. I wasn't aware until after
19 I got out that my auditing was going to be used against
20 me, honestly. I don't think any person's really aware
21 until they get out that their auditing is public informa-
22 tion.

23 You get -- you're in the -- you don't believe any-
24 thing. You couldn't possibly, if you're a staff member,

1 believe anything other than that the group is great. And
2 you don't believe that's true. You're conditioned and
3 brainwashed, and you don't believe those things until
4 they happen.

5 MR. LeCHER: Why did you disconnect from your
6 family?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Because my parents were supposed
8 to be suppressive people, as far as Scientology was con-
9 cerned. I found that my parents are the most sanest
10 people that I have around me, currently.

11 MR. LeCHER: With all these things going around in
12 Clearwater, why didn't you call the -- well, I guess I
13 can probably answer the question: Why didn't you call the
14 Board of Health? But, apparently, you were upset about
15 them and you just believed -- I'm not going to speculate.

16 MS. VAN SCHAICK: That's a totally different issue.
17 I did end up in an upset over that.

18 Another thing: Being in Clearwater and having my
19 child in Las Vegas, it was not a very cool thing to get
20 in a fight with executives in Clearwater and have your
21 child in a different place and start a Board of Health
22 thing. And I was too indoctrinated to realize the -- that
23 I had citizenship. I didn't realize I was a citizen until
24 three years ago.

1 MR. LeCHER: You didn't realize you were a citizen?

2 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely. I've not been a
3 citizen of the United States; I've been a citizen of
4 Scientology.

5 MR. LeCHER: Oh, but you don't mean it that you're
6 an alien?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No, I'm not an alien in that
8 sense; no.

9 MR. LeCHER: Do you remember where the children
10 were kept when they were taken a mile and -- an hour and-
11 a-half ride from the Fort Harrison?

12 MS. VAN SCHAICK: No. They were at -- the children
13 were at Clearwater when I was there. They were setting
14 up a different facility at that time, and the parents were
15 upset because the facility was being removed from the
16 Fort Harrison. Where the children ended up, only the
17 parents at the Fort Harrison could answer that.

18 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

19 MRS. GARVEY: Where were they kept at the Fort
20 Harrison?

21 MR. LeCHER: Oh, at the Fort Harrison where were
22 they kept? In the back --

23 MS. VAN SCHAICK: In the back, right behind the
24 parking lot.

1 MR. LeCHER: Didn't the parents ever question that
2 they don't want their children taken a mile -- an hour
3 and-a-half drive away?

4 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Yeah. There were some parents
5 that questioned that, and they got RPFed.

6 MR. LeCHER: Well --

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: There were parents that definitely
8 did question that. You know, motherhood and fatherhood
9 is something that is a natural instinct and thank God
10 for it, because that's why a lot of us, as we got older,
11 got the hell out of there.

12 MR. LeCHER: What did it take you -- what were your
13 personal things -- what did it take you to start raising
14 questions? What was the final straw that you just said: "I've
15 got to start questioning; I've got to get out of this
16 organization"?

17 MS. VAN SCHAICK: David's death.

18 MR. LeCHER: David's death. That's your brother-
19 in-law?

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Right.

21 MR. LeCHER: Now, you're a mother and I assume a
22 good one and all, but when you saw these children in such
23 deplorable conditions and living in such deplorable con-
24 ditions, didn't that bother you? Why didn't you report it

1 somebody in authority in the county or city government or
2 police department in this county?

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I had this huge ideal that I
4 could straighten it out internally in the organization,
5 that it could be corrected as an internal problem.

6 With the training that I had, knowing policy and
7 the way the operation of the organization runs -- was
8 running at that time, that I thought it would be better
9 off to be handled internally and straighten things out.
10 And that's -- was probably my basic concept for a lot of
11 years, and realizing nine years later that nothing really
12 internally gets handled, that it really doesn't. It's
13 one game against another, one farce against another, and
14 that the whole thing was a lie.

15 MR. LeCHER: Well, the whole organization -- in
16 fact, these hearings have had a very disquieting effect
17 on the City of Clearwater.

18 If we had some sort of other forum in the future
19 with other people that are currently involved in the
20 Church of Scientology who would like to come forward, do
21 you think that would be worthwhile?

22 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

23 I think that through the years, you'll have more
24 and more Scientologists leave the organization. I

1 consider myself a minor person that's left the organiza-
2 tion compared to people that have been in twenty, thirty
3 years or longer.

4 I think what would be interesting is -- it's kind
5 of like you're only skimming the top of the -- the very
6 top. And there are things that are wrong -- people will
7 have no idea until five or ten years the other things that
8 we will find out and I find out will get documented as
9 we go on, that there were a lot of things that happened.
10 And there are a lot of things that still will come out.

11 And I don't know. Maybe we all ought to take lie
12 detector tests. I mean, they'll certainly believe us
13 then. That's what the E-Meter is.

14 But -- I can't answer your question.

15 MR. LeCHER: Why would you participate in bringing
16 someone back against their will? Didn't that bother you,
17 either?

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Policy.

19 MR. LeCHER: Policy, okay.

20 Do you -- you, especially, your mind -- you felt
21 like your mind was being controlled, but -- how do you --
22 how was your mind controlled? By just -- by same thought,
23 repetition, or -- how did they control your mind?

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, you can look at Korean

1 brainwashing: no sleep, long hours. When you have some-
2 one that -- all right. When you take someone and you
3 don't put him on a diet, a normal diet of food, and you're
4 eating a diet of heavy starches, fifteen to twenty hours
5 a day, seven days a week, no freedom, you know -- no
6 freedom to really enjoy what's going on in life.

7 I'm sure if I was at the Fort Harrison on staff
8 now that Saturday would probably be a big thrill if I
9 got liberty and could see the beach. That you don't
10 really have -- you're not capable -- you get so entwined
11 in the organization: the repetitions, the terminology -
12 it's like a secret terminology and it's like a little
13 clique when you're in high school - and you get caught
14 up into that whole game and the constant over and over and
15 over and over the same thing. It's just like when your
16 Dad says, "Tie your shoes, tie your shoes, tie your
17 shoes." And you tie your shoes.

18 MR. LeCHER: It seems to me that - I've asked this
19 of one other witness but - it seems that you're a house
20 divided against itself and I don't know how you could
21 trust each other. I mean, if you're forced to work long
22 hours for little or no pay and your child is rarely with
23 you, and others participating like that, how in the world
24 do you learn to -- is the organization held together?

1 I mean, without trust and friendships and loyalties --

2 MS. VAN SCHAICK: They think that they all trust
3 one another, that they're working for one goal of mankind,
4 which is a real fascinating thing. And if the staff
5 really took a look at internally what's going on -- I'm
6 sure they've seen their GO personnel and their high
7 executives -- they're the target ones, presently. And
8 if the staff, presently, looked around at all their
9 heavyweights that were there a year ago, they sure are
10 not putting their names on any kind of policies and
11 they're letting some dumb staff members, as far as I'm
12 concerned, become the --

13 MR. CALDERBANK: The scapegoat?

14 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- scapegoat, the kind -- the
15 guy that's going to end up in a Committee of Evidence is
16 the fool that puts his name -- the only thing I have to
17 say about it: Don't ever put anything in writing.

18 MR. HATCHETT: Why --

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, make sure that you don't
20 put it in writing, because that was L. Ron Hubbard's
21 stable datum. And that's exactly how you get yourself
22 nailed. Don't put it in writing, because you will --
23 they will -- you'll find out eventually it's used against
24 you.

1 MR. LeCHER: Well, Mr. Walters was in for seventeen
2 years or more, two ladies were in for seventeen years,
3 you're in for nine years. When all these people leave,
4 who's left minding the store?

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: When every --

6 MR. LeCHER: How will they replace these people?

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well -- so, what is -- what you're
8 really asking is -- when all the people leave, what they
9 will have is what we used to call in Ethics the psychotic
10 cases. They will be the guys that are left there at the
11 Fort Harrison. It will be very interesting to see how
12 the Fort Harrison operates at that point in time.

13 Because I think that the able beings -- and I'm
14 seeing what's going on, and as far as I'm concerned, the
15 able beings are getting out; they're not becoming the
16 scapegoats anymore. And the smart ones will get out.
17 And what you will be left with is a lot of crippled,
18 psychotic kids that have no background, no -- their moral
19 justice will be tied into -- it's like a Nazi German
20 camp: spying, you know, who can spy on who. And you
21 will, probably, at that point in time have to have a lot
22 of heavily trained people that know how to help them.

23 MR. LeCHER: Will they be classified as good
24 Germans?

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Well, if they take a look at
2 what's going on, that's exactly what's happening.

3 MR. LeCHER: I have no further questions. I think
4 that we've been questioning you long enough.

5 Mr. -- do you have something you want to ask?

6 MR. CALDERBANK: Just -- just one more.

7 LaVenda, you're -- you were an auditor and you had
8 a lot of professional knowledge in both giving and taking
9 the auditing in Scientology in their courses and in
10 their background.

11 As a professional opinion, then, would you feel
12 that public scrutiny of financial transactions --

13 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: -- in the Church --

15 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: -- would either prevent you from
17 giving or prevent students from taking or impinge their
18 freedom?

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: It would absolutely not prevent
21 them, or it's absolutely needed to further this ability
22 to --

23 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Do you mean as far as - I'm
24 not sure if I understand - giving the money?

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Would the scrutiny of their
2 financial transactions --

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Would the scrutiny of what they're
4 doing color over their financial things?

5 MR. CALDERBANK: Would that have prevented you
6 from giving --

7 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Oh, if --

8 MR. CALDERBANK: -- work as a staff member?

9 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- I had been aware of what they
10 actually were -- what the high executives were doing with
11 the income and been aware of what was really going on,
12 I surely wouldn't have been in Scientology --

13 MR. CALDERBANK: That's --

14 MS. VAN SCHAICK: -- as a staff member.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: But what I'm asking is: Would
16 that have prevented you, financial scrutiny of the trans-
17 actions, would that have prevented you from taking your
18 courses or giving your courses when you were a pro-
19 fessional auditor?

20 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Would it have prevented me from
21 giving the courses?

22 MR. LeCHER: She has -- I think she's answered the
23 question.

24 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I've answered the question, yes.

1 I would not do courses if I had known what was going on.

2 MR. LeCHER: I want to -- the attorney --

3 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I don't think I understand it
4 in --

5 MR. LeCHER: I believe that you have in various
6 ways, Miss Van Schaick.

7 Are you satisfied?

8 MR. CALDERBANK: I want to get back to the freedom
9 of religion --

10 MR. LeCHER: We don't want to talk about freedom
11 of religion. That's an --

12 MS. VAN SCHAICK: I can't --

13 MR. LeCHER: -- issue that we shouldn't get into.

14 I want to ask this question for the City Attorney.
15 He wants to know about this big scam that you mentioned
16 in publicity and promotion. And how is this big scam
17 accomplished?

18 You mentioned something and called it a big scam.

19 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Ten percent of their CGI has
20 always been unaccounted for. And, basically, it's the
21 gross income and what you take off the top in the organi-
22 zation.

23 In each city there is a -- most of -- like, in
24 Las Vegas there was a mission and then there was what's

1 called an org., or the main organization.

2 The mission holders, basically, were in control up
3 until recently over monies that were going in and out of
4 the organization, which made a lot of mission holders
5 very wealthy, until -- they have recently changed that.
6 Orgs. were taking all of their money and sending it on
7 to Los Angeles and to Clearwater. And they were,
8 basically, just the workhorse -- it's like the lower
9 working class of the whole organization is what,
10 basically, the orgs. are.

11 And while the orgs. are taking all the people in
12 and flowing the money process, the executives are living
13 pretty high on the hog if they really take a look at
14 what's going on.

15 MR. LeCHER: Would it be safe to assume that if an
16 org. takes in five hundred thousand dollars a week that
17 fifty thousand dollars would be going to someone else?

18 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

19 MR. LeCHER: Off the top? Okay.

20 Do you want to ask --

21 MRS. GARVEY: One question.

22 MR. LeCHER: One question.

23 MRS. GARVEY: To your knowledge, is -- Clearwater
24 is Flag Base?

1 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Absolutely.

2 MRS. GARVEY: So, all orders would come out of
3 Clearwater? Whatever happens in the organization will
4 come out of Flag Base, which is Clearwater?

5 MS. VAN SCHAICK: Through Clearwater. Everything
6 gets cleared through Clearwater. Clearwater is the seat
7 of the operation.

8 MR. LeCHER: Thank you very much for your testimony
9 here --

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Thank you, LaVenda.

11 MR. LeCHER: You're another very bright young
12 woman. We admire you and thank you.

13 MR. FLYNN: At this time I will introduce the
14 Affidavit of Stephen Garritano. And I'll read briefly
15 from it. In order to save some time, I'll skip over
16 portions of it and read the pertinent portions into the
17 record.

18 "My introduction to Scientology was in January of
19 1977 when the following representations were made to me
20 concerning the benefits of auditing in Scientology. These
21 representations were that auditing was scientifically
22 guaranteed to confer the following benefits," and then
23 there is a number of them listed which I won't read.

24 And then there's a statement about Mr. Hubbard's

1 background and representations and Mr. Garritano's
2 reliance on them. "Based on the above representations,
3 I joined the Church of Scientology. After two and-a-half
4 years experience as a Scientologist, I eventually dis-
5 covered that the above representations were false and
6 made for the single purpose to entice the people to
7 purchase auditing and courses or join staff.

8 "In early 1979, I went to Flag Land Base in Clear-
9 water, Florida. I contracted an illness which was later
10 diagnosed as hepatitis. I received an injection/hypo-
11 dermic needle from a Scientologist dressed in a white
12 uniform, which I was told was a hepatitis vaccine. To
13 my knowledge, this individual was not a medical doctor.

14 "I was later diagnosed by my father, Dr. Garritano,
15 in the Beth Israel Hospital in Boston, to have suffered
16 from hepatitis, mononucleosis, and strep throat.

17 "While in Clearwater, I observed the living con-
18 ditions of staff members to be unsanitary. On one
19 occasion I entered a small room, which was constructed to
20 facilitate one occupant, inhabited by a minimum of eight
21 people. These individuals slept in two triple bunks
22 and two single beds.

23 "Conditions for those individuals imprisoned in
24 the Rehabilitation Project Force, RPF, were unhealthy

1 and unsanitary. Those individuals were forced to live
2 and sleep in the garage."

3 It's signed, "Stephen Garritano," under the pains
4 and penalties of perjury.

5 If need be, Mr. Garritano, at some point, can be
6 called to testify.

7 (The Affidavit of Stephen Garritano
8 was marked as Exhibit No. 45, as of
this date.)

9 MR. FLYNN: The next witness is Janie Peterson.

10
11 JANIE PETERSON, a witness herein,
12 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
13 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

14 MR. LeCHER: Your name is Janie Peterson?

15 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

16 MR. LeCHER: All right.

17 Miss Peterson, I'll ask you the same standard
18 questions I've asked all the other witnesses.

19 They are: Are you appearing today and testifying
20 under oath voluntarily?

21 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

22 MR. LeCHER: All right.

23 Are you -- have you been paid by anyone for your
24 testimony, other than expenses for coming to Clearwater?

1 MS. PETERSON: No.

2 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
3 Church of Scientology?

4 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

5 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have a
6 lawsuit against you?

7 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

8 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
9 should state anything but the truth or has anyone
10 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

11 MS. PETERSON: No.

12 MR. LeCHER: Would you like to make a statement or
13 say something in your own words?

14 MS. PETERSON: Yes. Basically, I'd just like to
15 briefly give you a rundown on my background in Scien-
16 tology and then you can ask me whatever questions you
17 want to.

18 I was involved in Scientology for five years,
19 from 1975 until July of 1980. During that time period,
20 I held three different positions in the organization.
21 The first one was called the Director of Processing,
22 which is in charge of all the auditing that occurs within
23 the organization. I was then promoted to a position
24 called Technical Secretary, which was in charge of all

1 auditing and training that occurred within the organiza-
2 tion. About a year later, I was promoted to the Guardian's
3 Office, which was the last position that I held.

4 During that time period that I was in the Guardian's
5 Office, was the time period when the Hartwells and
6 LaVenda Van Schaick and another lady who was involved
7 in Clearwater, Tonja Burden -- this was during the time
8 period when they were all leaving the Church and were
9 having various problems.

10 MR. LeCHER: You were the head auditor?

11 MS. PETERSON: I beg your pardon?

12 MR. LeCHER: You were the head auditor?

13 MS. PETERSON: I was the executive over the audit-
14 ing that occurred in the Las Vegas Organization.

15 MR. LeCHER: Who devised -- I mean, who thought up
16 auditing and who used -- who improved upon it? Who
17 devised the test? Who did the training? There must be
18 a training manual that you must use as a teaching aid.
19 Was that you and --

20 MS. PETERSON: No. Mr. Hubbard.

21 MR. LeCHER: Every technique used in auditing was
22 Mr. Hubbard's?

23 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

24 MR. LeCHER: He gave it to you and others, then,

1 you carried it out?

2 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

3 You weren't allowed to do anything on your own.

4 MR. LeCHER: All right.

5 I'd like to know what you did in the Guardian's
6 Office vis a vis these other people that you have men-
7 tioned.

8 MS. PETERSON: I beg your pardon?

9 MR. LeCHER: What did you do in the Guardian's
10 Office with respect to these other people that you have
11 mentioned?

12 MS. PETERSON: Well, we were -- Mr. and Mrs.
13 Hartwell left Scientology very upset. They were -- had
14 received a bill from the head office - and I'm not sure --
15 exactly sure where - and they were -- they were having
16 some sort of an upset. Mrs. Hartwell's daughter was
17 Executive Director of the organization at that time.

18 They -- what's called a mission was sent out to
19 the organization from the United States Guardian's
20 Office -- I might point out right here that all of the
21 Guardian's Offices are run exactly the same. They all
22 are run by the United States Guardian's Office, which is
23 in Los Angeles. All orders and all procedures that come
24 into any Guardian's Office come from the United States

1 Guardian's Office. They operate the standard policy.
2 There's no difference between the one here and the one
3 in Las Vegas or Utah or wherever.

4 And the Hartwells were -- were subject -- subjected
5 to this mission that came up from Los Angeles. They
6 were -- they had several meetings with a man by the name
7 of Alan Hubbard, who was taping their conversations,
8 although the Hartwells were not aware of that.

9 Mr. Hartwell's auditing information -- copies of
10 the auditing information were made and circulated all
11 over the United States and out of the country. They also went to
12 the Worldwide Guardian's Office, which is in England.

13 At one point, his auditing information was --
14 excuse me. It was being used against him, in other words.
15 He was also accused of trying to extort Church money
16 from the Church. This was based on mainly hours of
17 taped testimony that had been taken and edited down to
18 a very small cassette tape.

19 On Tonja Burden, her auditing information was sent
20 in to -- it was sent here -- or to Las Vegas from the
21 Guardian's Office here in Clearwater, confidential audit-
22 ing information that she had given. It was accompanied
23 with an order to the Public Relations person in Las
24 Vegas to take to the Review Journal, which is a newspaper,

1 in an attempt to discredit her to show that she was this
2 bad person, supposedly, based on this information.

3 On Mrs. Van Schaick -- she already spoke about the
4 program that was written up called Shake and Bake.
5 Basically, this -- all programs that were written up were
6 given names. That just happened to be the name of that
7 one. And the purpose of the program was to -- in fact,
8 it was either the first or second step listed on the
9 program. The wording was: "Plant seeds of doubt in her
10 mind concerning her attorney, Michael Flynn, and in her
11 husband's mind regarding her character."

12 I really don't have -- on that particular area,
13 unless you have some questions.

14 MR. LeCHER: No. I'm just -- I just find it that
15 you were the one --

16 MS. PETERSON: Oh, yes.

17 MR. LeCHER: -- that audited some of the witnesses
18 who were brought before this Commission. And --

19 MS. PETERSON: That I audited them?

20 MR. LeCHER: Well, that you were the -- pardon me,
21 you were in the Guardian's Office that did some dirty
22 tricks with the Hartwells and others that --

23 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

24 Also, on the Shake and Bake program, a man by the

1 name of Barry Clingler was sent to Boston to attempt to
2 what they call handle her, in other words, to get her to
3 be quiet, to disassociate herself from her attorney, to
4 drop the lawsuit, and to keep her mouth shut, basically.
5 He was sent because he was a friend -- had used to be a
6 friend of hers. Also, Pam Bevin, who she already testi-
7 fied was her auditor, was sent because it was felt that
8 she would respond to Pam Bevin where she might not
9 respond to anyone else.

10 MR. LeCHER: When you used these -- what you
11 learned through auditing about a person, an individual
12 like Hartwell for one, and others that you have mentioned,
13 you concised it down and gave it to the press, did the
14 press use these -- use this, normally? Or did they check
15 it out and find out who you were, who the Guardians
16 were, and become suspect?

17 MS. PETERSON: Well, an instance on Tonja Burden,
18 the press did not use it, in fact -- well, did not use
19 it. I don't know if it was used in Clearwater; in other
20 words, I do know that it was not used in Las Vegas.

21 MR. LeCHER: But, specifically, did the press - or
22 generally speaking, not mentioning Clearwater or any
23 other - did they use this information that you gathered
24 through auditing against an individual as a filler for a

1 slow day or whatever reasons they used them?

2 If the press didn't use it, then, why -- who did
3 you give it to?

4 MS. PETERSON: Who did we give it to?

5 MR. LeCHER: This information. Their spouse,
6 their loved ones, or -- I think Mr. Hartwell said his
7 information, confidential information, ended up in the
8 newspapers.

9 Apparently, the Guardian's Office gave that informa-
10 tion to the newspaper.

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MR. LeCHER: Was that commonplace that newspapers
13 would use information supplied to them by the Guardian's
14 Office by the newspaper?

15 MS. PETERSON: I -- I really -- I don't know on a
16 general basis. It was only done a few times while I was
17 in the Guardian's Office.

18 MR. LeCHER: So, you don't know if the newspapers
19 generally do this?

20 MS. PETERSON: Yeah. I really don't know.

21 MR. LeCHER: We have an outline here.

22 Would you like to go into the Fair Game and
23 suicides, the Blown Student Doctrine, et cetera? Or wou-
24 you rather us just ask you questions?

1 MS. PETERSON: Well, basically, on the Fair Game
2 Policy, I was always told that the Fair Game Policy was
3 cancelled, and I believed this to be true until I went to
4 the Guardian's Office. And upon entering the Guardian's
5 Office, I found that, indeed, it was not cancelled. The
6 actual words "fair game" were not -- to my knowledge, not
7 spoken, at least when I was around, however, the practices
8 were: inasmuch as there was a man, Mr. Walters, who had
9 been in Scientology for some time and he was under sus-
10 pect from the Guardian's Office.

11 He was, basically, unhappy with some of the things
12 that were occurring and he was speaking out against them
13 to other Scientologists. And investigations were being
14 done, when I first went into the Guardian's Office, into
15 Mr. Walters' background. They were looking for his so-
16 called crimes. There's a policy by Mr. Hubbard in the
17 Guardian's Office called "Attacking Scientology," where
18 it says that if anyone says anything bad about Scien-
19 tology, you look into their past, whether they have what
20 is called "blood-dripping crimes." So, Mr. Walters'
21 preclear folder, his auditing information, was to be gone
22 through looking for that.

23 He was expelled and declared a Suppressive Person,
24 and a list of people, including his wife and his

1 stepchildren, was issued, stating that these people were
2 called what's called Potential Trouble Sources; in other
3 words, they were connected to Mr. Walters and either
4 they -- either had to disconnect from him or they would
5 be also expelled from Scientology. There was a list of
6 about thirteen or fourteen people.

7 He was --

8 MR. LeCHER: Are you talking about Mr. Walters
9 now?

10 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

11 He -- there was a -- oh, again, I'm referring to
12 the Fair Game Policy. There was a man whose name was
13 Don Cooper, who was a plant, in other words a spy, on
14 Mr. Walters and his friends. He had a code name of Mack.
15 He infiltrated Mr. Walters' group of friends and became
16 very good friends with Mr. Walters and his wife -- family
17 and friends.

18 And Mack would call the Guardian's Office, at least
19 once a day, with information on what Mr. Walters and his
20 friends - this includes the Hartwells and Tonja Burden -
21 as to what they were doing.

22 There was also another plant, what they call
23 plant -- they either call them plants or friends. His
24 code name was Oscar. He later turned out to -- his name

1 was -- actually, his last name was Bill Broderick. His
2 main purpose was to spy on Tonja Burden.

3 At one point, they -- the United States Guardian's
4 Office was getting upset because not enough information
5 was coming back on Miss Burden's activities. So, he was
6 flown to Boston to Mike Flynn's office under the guise
7 of being a disaffected, unhappy Scientologist, and he was
8 trying to get Mr. Flynn to represent him so that he could
9 get sort of inside, privy information as to what was going
10 on. And at one point, it was even considered that, per-
11 haps, he would then -- after a lawsuit was filed and all
12 that, he would then -- Mr. Broderick would then drop the
13 suit and accuse Mr. Flynn of malpractice and raise the
14 point.

15 I don't know if that was ever totally decided, but
16 it was at one point discussed.

17 Another -- another man by the name of Russ Andrews
18 was brought into Las Vegas from Utah, where he was
19 established in Miss Burden's apartment building. And he
20 was going to become friends with her and give information
21 back to the Guardian's Office regarding Miss Burden, also.
22 That was never --

23 MR. LeCHER: How old is Miss Burden at this time?

24 MS. PETERSON: At this time?

1 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

2 MS. PETERSON: About nineteen, twenty.

3 MR. LeCHER: In your outline you have "Scien-
4 tology" -- number three, "Scientology Policies and
5 Practices: Potential Trouble Source, PTS, and Dis-
6 connect," if one uniformly appeared, and, number two,
7 "policies applied to personal experience, divorce,
8 husband -- give children to husband."

9 Is that something that you could -- that personally
10 happened to you or is it a common policy?

11 MS. PETERSON: That's something that was applied
12 to me.

13 At one point, when I was in the Guardian's Office,
14 my husband wanted me to leave the Guardian's Office. He
15 did not want me to leave Scientology; he just simply
16 didn't want me to work so many hours and be away from
17 my children so much. And I was sort of undecided as to
18 whether I should do that or not. He and I began having
19 a lot of problems over it. I -- basically, I just felt
20 that I didn't want him to push me into a decision. I
21 wanted to make it on my own. And it was causing some
22 problems. I was quite ill at the time. I was having
23 stomach problems and various problems because of this
24 pressure.

1 I was sent to the United States Guardian's Office
2 in an attempt to do what they call handle it. And I
3 was given what they call a Chaplain's Court, basically,
4 where a so-called minister of the Church comes and gives
5 you counseling, marriage counseling. He -- his name was
6 Paul, Paul Sheffield.

7 I was told at that time by Mr. Sheffield, at the
8 very beginning of the interview, that he basically didn't
9 care whether my husband and I stayed together. And the
10 purpose of the counseling was to keep me on staff because
11 I was needed very badly. He then wrote up a program of
12 how my husband and I were supposed to handle our differ-
13 ences.

14 And I was then called into the office and one of
15 my seniors, one of my bosses, told me that the problem
16 between my husband and I was becoming totally out of --
17 totally out of control, totally out of hand, and that,
18 basically, he -- what he wanted me to do and what I
19 should do and what others had done was to divorce my
20 husband. And since I had two small children and I was --
21 financially, I would have been unable to support them, I
22 should give them to my husband because he could support
23 the children and I could leave the children all day long.
24 And that if I did not do that, that I was letting the

1 whole organization down and that there would be ramifi-
2 cations.

3 MR. LeCHER: What did you do?

4 MS. PETERSON: I left the Guardian's Office within
5 a few weeks after that.

6 MR. LeCHER: Did you leave Scientology or just the
7 Guardian's Office?

8 MS. PETERSON: The Guardian's Office. I left Scien-
9 tology about a year later.

10 I still did work for the Guardian's Office; I wasn't
11 on staff.

12 MR. LeCHER: Is your husband still in Scientology?

13 MS. PETERSON: At that time?

14 MR. LeCHER: At this time.

15 MS. PETERSON: No.

16 MR. LeCHER: You both then left?

17 MS. PETERSON: We both left at the same time.

18 Okay. In the Guardian's Office - there's two I'm
19 going to point out - there are various bureaus called
20 Information Bureau, Eagle Bureau, Public Relations Bureau,
21 Social Coordination for various organizations.

22 My position was Social Coordination, which was,
23 basically, in charge of Scientology front groups. How-
24 ever, it was a very small Guardian's Office and they were

1 under what they call attack by the Hartwells and Mrs.
2 Van Schaick and various other people. So, I carried out
3 a lot of duties that normally I would not have done. In
4 other words, in a large Guardian's Office, usually
5 Social Coordination doesn't get into those activities,
6 but because of our limited personnel and all the problems
7 that we were having, I took on other duties.

8 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

9 You've got Scientology front groups: Apple Schools,
10 Narcanon, ASI, Citizens' Commission for Human Rights,
11 CCHR, Gerus Society, and the Safe Environment Fund.

12 These are all front groups for Scientology?

13 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

14 MR. LeCHER: Are these used to get new recruits
15 or to gain respectability for the organization?

16 MS. PETERSON: Yeah. Basically, the purpose of the
17 groups is to -- the stated purpose is to -- so that
18 Scientology becomes indispensable to the community.

19 In other words, an Apple School would be set up
20 and you will have non-staff members set up the school,
21 however, these are dedicated Scientologists and they're
22 usually hand-picked.

23 MR. LeCHER: Do you have any information if any
24 of these five or six front groups are currently operating

1 in Clearwater?

2 MS. PETERSON: I believe there's a Gerus Society.
3 I'm not sure what all there is.

4 MRS. GARVEY: There's a Narcanon.

5 MS. PETERSON: A Narcanon.

6 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

7 Many people don't know why in Scientology you have
8 these front groups.

9 What is an Apple School? Is that -- that sounds
10 like the Beatles group. I know the Beatles have a cor-
11 poration called Apple, and they would use this for their
12 own promotional material. But I -- what is an Apple
13 School? I mean, does that have anything to do with the
14 Beatles or is it -- I'm sure it doesn't, but I -- and
15 Narcanon, what is that? How effective is Narcanon in
16 treating drug abuse?

17 MS. PETERSON: Well --

18 MR. LeCHER: In your view.

19 MS. PETERSON: Okay.

20 Apple Schools are schools that are set up by
21 Scientology, the purpose of which is to gain respecta-
22 bility and to make the public aware of how normal Scien-
23 tology is supposed to be.

24 MR. LeCHER: Can non-Scientology children attend an

1 Apple School?

2 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

3 MR. LeCHER: Is that encouraged?

4 MS. PETERSON: Most of the time, yes, because the
5 fees for Apple Schools are the same as most other private
6 schools, and most of the time Scientologists don't have
7 the money to pay it. In other words, a staff member's
8 child certainly wouldn't go because they wouldn't have the
9 money to pay for it.

10 MR. LeCHER: Do teachers in an Apple School have
11 certification? Are they certified by the state as to
12 educational standards and practices?

13 MS. PETERSON: It depends on the state; in other
14 words, it depends what the state laws are regarding certi-
15 fication of teachers in private schools.

16 MR. LeCHER: Are you going to tell me about Narca-
17 non?

18 MS. PETERSON: Narcanon is a rehabilitation drug
19 program which is run by Scientology. My experience with
20 it was that it was not very successful. I really don't
21 know about any of the other -- all these groups are
22 set up and there's various programs in the Guardian's
23 Office on how to set them up.

24 Also, part of the training received while you're in

1 the Guardian's Office is that if you're asked by anyone
2 if the Guardian's Office runs these schools, you're to
3 tell them, "No." You're to say that you're involved
4 with or that you help out or that they use the technology
5 of Scientology. However, you're never to tell, outside
6 of the Guardian's Office, that you are, in fact, running
7 it or that the money goes into the Church of Scientology
8 from these groups.

9 MR. LeCHER: Was the Church of Scientology success-
10 ful in getting Narcanon in any one of -- in Pinellas
11 County or throughout the country, were they successful
12 in getting this?

13 MS. PETERSON: You mean, successful in establishing
14 it?

15 MR. LeCHER: In establishing it and setting up
16 business.

17 MS. PETERSON: I really don't know.

18 MR. LeCHER: What is an ASI?

19 MS. PETERSON: Applied Scholastics Institute is --

20 MRS. GARVEY: I didn't --

21 MS. PETERSON: Applied Scholastics.

22 MR. LeCHER: What is the purpose of ASI? Why a
23 scholastic institute?

24 MS. PETERSON: It -- to -- people that are having

1 problems in certain areas in their studies or --

2 MR. LeCHER: Primarily for school children or for
3 college-age children or for adults --

4 MS. PETERSON: It's primarily for school children;
5 however, they do accept people of all ages.

6 MR. LeCHER: Citizens' Commission for Human Rights.
7 What is that? Is that a civil rights group?

8 MS. PETERSON: It's a group that its purpose is to
9 expose psychiatric abuses and to cause what is called
10 black PR, which is bad public relations for psychiatrists,
11 psychologists, mental health: to do everything necessary
12 for -- everything that's possible to get rid of psychia-
13 try and psychiatrists.

14 MR. LeCHER: It has nothing to do with civil rights
15 or human rights as we know it?

16 MS. PETERSON: It's only to expose --

17 MR. LeCHER: It's to expose --

18 MS. PETERSON: -- psychiatric abuses.

19 MR. LeCHER: Nothing to do with minority rights.
20 Gerus Society. Is that for the elderly?

21 MS. PETERSON: Yes. And this is just to expose
22 problems within -- that the elderly people have.

23 MR. LeCHER: I have personally heard members of the
24 Gerus Society at various talk shows around Pinellas

1 County at various times.

2 MS. PETERSON: The whole purpose of -- all these
3 programs were set up particularly by Mary Sue Hubbard
4 under the direction of Mr. Hubbard, and they were to gain
5 good public relations for Scientology.

6 MR. LeCHER: The Safe Environment Fund. What is
7 that?

8 MS. PETERSON: The Safe Environment Fund was a fund
9 that was set up to collect funds and support for the
10 convicted - or the indicted - executives of Scientology:
11 Mary Sue Hubbard and those people.

12 At all times we were told that this was a big con-
13 spiracy by the government, that these -- that was the
14 reason these people were indicted, and that these people
15 had, at no time, ever done anything wrong or not legal,
16 that the government had no information that was correct.
17 We were not told that they were, indeed, guilty of the
18 crimes or that they even later pleaded guilty to the
19 crimes.

20 MR. LeCHER: Back to the Guardian's Office: Did
21 you see the programs -- you mentioned programs in the
22 Guardian's Office. Did you see the programs in the
23 Guardian's Office? You mentioned the word "programs."

24 MS. PETERSON: Oh, yes, there were many programs.

1 Everything you do in the Guardian's Office is written --
2 is off of the program. You don't do anything on your
3 own.

4 MR. LeCHER: Did you participate in them; did you
5 see them; and can you tell me about them?

6 MS. PETERSON: Well, there were so many of them,
7 I -- you know, I -- everything you did, like I say, was
8 based on program. If you were going to set up a Narcanon
9 drug program, you worked off of the program. If you were
10 going to go to the police station and try to get Mr.
11 Hartwell arrested for extortion, you worked off of a pro-
12 gram. Everything was from a program.

13 MR. FLYNN: On that point, I might -- I might men-
14 tion that, before the hearings conclude, we will be intro-
15 ducing a packet of Guardian's Office programs, City of
16 Clearwater, Florida, which is probably about two-inches
17 thick, a copy of which will be given to each Commissioner.
18 That was just Clearwater during a specific period of time
19 and only the documents that we could get our hands on.
20 There are approximately another eighty thousand documents
21 which were destroyed before they were received, and
22 they're all what they call Red Box Documents, which con-
23 tain the most sensitive and highly secretive operations
24 of the Guardian's Office.

1 MS. PETERSON: One program I remember in particular
2 was the gross income of the Flag Land Base at the Fort
3 Harrison dropped to about a million dollars a week or
4 a little below, which was considered to be a heavy drop
5 because they were most of the time making between two and
6 three million dollars. At that time the staff members
7 at the Fort Harrison for the following week, their diet
8 consisted of beans and rice as a punishment for the gross
9 decline of their income.

10 Somehow, this information - I'm not sure how -
11 leaked out to the public and, I believe, the press, and
12 a program came into our organization in Las Vegas - it's
13 called an Information Line - on how we were supposed to
14 handle with the press this -- this fact. In other words,
15 if the press asked us about it, we were to tell them how
16 nutritious beans and rice were and to also change the
17 subject. In other words, we would say, "Beans and rice
18 are nutritious, however, you know, the abuses of psychia-
19 trists are really something to talk about," if you get
20 my meaning. I mean, it was like, you know, a little bit
21 of information, then, drop it. That was part of the
22 public relations training.

23 If they asked you -- if somebody asked you if the
24 wall was blue, in other words, you might or -- you might

1 or you might not admit to that. But you would then talk
2 about how horrible the pink wall was, in other words.

3 MR. LeCHER: Throw the blame on someone else?

4 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

5 MR. LeCHER: In your Narcanon and other programs,
6 did you ever have any MDs or DOs or anyone on your staff
7 that has passed the state board?

8 MS. PETERSON: On the staff, no. Although, you
9 were supposed to send the addicts to a doctor if there
10 was problems.

11 MR. LeCHER: How did you get credibility without
12 anyone running these programs having an educational back-
13 ground to back these up, these principles up?

14 MS. PETERSON: Well, you know, I really don't have
15 too much experience with other drug programs. But it was
16 basically PR, you know. You'd go in and -- you had to
17 get all the licenses by the state and follow the rules
18 and regulations set by the state or the city. But -- and
19 you would also assure them that, you know, a medical
20 doctor was available and that type of thing.

21 Okay. Basically, a lot of these setups and the
22 questions you're asking in that area were part of what
23 they call B 1, which is Branch 1, which is the Information
24 and Intelligence Bureau. I was not real involved in that,

1 so I really don't know how exactly they would go about
2 it.

3 MR. LeCHER: Just for my curiosity: When and why
4 did you get in the Guardian's Office?

5 MS. PETERSON: Well, it was considered a promotion
6 basically. And --

7 MR. LeCHER: Did you feel like you were a bunch of
8 elitists, that you --

9 MS. PETERSON: Oh, yeah, you were told that. The
10 requirements to get into the Guardian's Office were quite
11 high. In other words, you had to -- very intensive test-
12 ing before you could get in. You had to be a true blue
13 Scientologist, you had to have a certain IQ, you couldn't
14 have a history of real heavy drug use or -- you had to
15 have a stable background.

16 MR. LeCHER: Apparently, you had to be rather
17 bright to get into the Guardians and -- why do, then, the
18 Scientologists prefer to have their people uneducated?

19 MS. PETERSON: I really don't know.

20 MR. LeCHER: School is evil or bad, I've heard from
21 other witnesses.

22 Were you trained to be a Guardian?

23 MS. PETERSON: Oh, very heavily.

24 MR. LeCHER: Can you tell me something about the

1 training that went into becoming a Guardian?

2 MS. PETERSON: Okay.

3 As I said, when you're first -- normally, you would
4 be approached to come into the Guardians. Someone would
5 approach you, like, the Assistant Guardian who's in
6 charge of the Guardian's Office. And after this intensive
7 testing, you would be accepted. And they have various
8 training levels. You had just a general training level
9 which would show you kind of the inside scoop on the
10 Guardian's Office.

11 One of the very first things -- first of all, you
12 were locked up and you couldn't have any windows open
13 because of security. They were very heavy on security
14 in the Guardian's Office.

15 One of the very first things that you would be
16 taught would be shredding, what they call shredding,
17 which, basically, was just take a piece of paper, perhaps,
18 that you didn't want anyone else to see because of what
19 was contained on that and put it in the shredding machine.
20 Also, there's a procedure called vetting, and that was --
21 when you get these various programs or orders, anything
22 that you didn't want anybody, other than a Guardian's
23 Office staff member to see, you would take a razor blade
24 and cut that portion of it out.

1 Now, included in that would be anything that would
2 show who the order came from. In other words, if I would
3 receive an order from my boss, I would shred out or vet
4 out, rather, the area that showed who the order came
5 from, also, who the order went to. Then, you had to have
6 a code so that you wouldn't get all these orders confused.
7 You had your own personal code. So, you might put a
8 little star by -- if it came from one person or a little,
9 you know -- another type of mark if it came from someone
10 else.

11 MR. FLYNN: For the record, Exhibit 16 is the
12 policy, The Vetting Hat Write Up, to which the witness
13 has just referred.

14 MS. PETERSON: Okay.

15 Anything else that might be vetted is anything that
16 would be considered sensitive. In other words, on some
17 of these programs of the Citizens' Commission on Human
18 Rights, there was a couple of lines in there about
19 obliterating psychology or psychiatrists or something.
20 You would vet out that area so that anybody looking at
21 it would think, "Oh, this is a really nice program just
22 designed to help people who've been harmed." In other
23 words, the real purpose of it would be vetted out so tha
24 it wouldn't show.

1 Another thing that we were trained on was how to
2 avoid subpoenas, how to handle the press, because --

3 MR. LeCHER: How were you taught to handle the
4 press?

5 MS. PETERSON: Always attack, never defend. Mr.
6 Hubbard said that it was impossible to defend, so you
7 would always attack.

8 That's also -- there was also training on how to
9 handle your attorneys, which was basically just to tell
10 them what to do. And if you ran into an attorney who
11 wouldn't do what you told him, you then would fire him
12 and find someone else. How to handle public officials --

13 MR. LeCHER: How do you handle a public official?

14 MS. PETERSON: Well, basically, it depends on what
15 they're after -- or what you're after, really.

16 If they make any kind of a comment that you think
17 is a slur on Scientology, then, you attack them.

18 Any public official that you were going before,
19 an investigation would be done by the Information Bureau.
20 Their background would be checked out very, very thorough-
21 ly. And let's say, for instance, you found out that there
22 was something in their past that perhaps they think
23 wouldn't be known, rather than coming right out and saying
24 it, you would make an insinuation about it, rather than

1 coming right out.

2 Another kind of training was what they call FBI
3 Raid Drills, which you would pretend that the FBI was
4 coming to raid your organization and you would practice
5 on how you would take care of that. Also, whoever was
6 in charge of the Information Bureau -- whoever would
7 answer the door, in other words -- and let's say the
8 FBI was there, whoever would answer the door would stall
9 while the Information Bureau man would take all the real
10 sensitive material that was in what's either called the
11 Gray File or Red Box -- would take that information and
12 shred it while stalling the FBI.

13 Also, if there was any threat of the FBI or the
14 police or anybody coming to the organization, the Gray
15 File/Red Box information was taken to what's called an
16 outside location, which only, maybe, two or three people
17 within the organization even knew about or knew where
18 it was at.

19 That was the usual training that we had.

20 MR. LeCHER: Were you trained in actual dirty
21 tricks?

22 MS. PETERSON: I --

23 MR. LeCHER: Or were you trained in dirty tricks
24 like breaking and entering?

1 MS. PETERSON: I was never trained in dirty tricks;
2 however, the Information Bureau was trained on that. In
3 fact, one of the -- one of the drills - what they call
4 drills, in other words, practices to give - in the Infor-
5 mation Bureau was a drill called "Tell A Lie." The pur-
6 pose of this was to learn to lie well. That was for the
7 Information Bureau; we were never -- I was never person-
8 ally taught that. But I observed Intelligence people
9 doing it.

10 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

11 I have many questions, but I'm going to give -- turn
12 it over to my colleagues.

13 Mr. Berfield, I think we start with you this time.

14 Before we start, do you have something for the
15 Commission?

16 MS. PETERSON: Okay.

17 At the time I was in the Guardian's Office, there
18 was a girl who I had been friends with for many years.
19 Her name was Carole Garrity; she was in charge of Public
20 Relations. She had a lot of information regarding the
21 various activities that myself and other people have
22 testified to. She was actually the person who would do
23 public events and that type of thing.

24 MR. LeCHER: Do you have any information that dirty

1 tricks are going on with the city government now or with
2 the city officials within the City of Clearwater?

3 MS. PETERSON: Within the City of Clearwater?

4 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

5 MS. PETERSON: I -- no.

6 MR. LeCHER: You have no knowledge of that or the
7 answer is "No."

8 MS. PETERSON: I have no knowledge of it.

9 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield.

10 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

11 Mr. Flynn made reference to this Red Box and you
12 later alluded to it. What would there be in something like
13 that?

14 MS. PETERSON: Well, I was in the Guardian's Office,
15 but I really didn't know, other than the fact that it was
16 obviously very, very sensitive because it was kept some-
17 place separately. When I heard reference to it made, I
18 asked the man that was in charge of it and he said that
19 I wasn't allowed to know what was in it.

20 MR. BERFIELD: Listen, what -- I'm still not sure
21 what motivated you to get into Scientology, in personally?

22 MS. PETERSON: In Scientology?

23 MR. BERFIELD: You personally.

24 MS. PETERSON: Oh, a friend of my husband's came

1 up and discussed Scientology, the benefits and all the
2 problems that he had and how much it had helped him. I
3 was having -- I had a history of having headaches,
4 occasionally. I also had a condition called hypoglycemia,
5 which is a medical condition, low blood sugar. He told
6 me that that could be -- it was found that that was a
7 psychological-type problem, that it could be cured.

8 He said that they had a lot of classes and a lot
9 of different things that would help me with me my chil-
10 dren, that I'd be able to communicate better, you know,
11 raise your IQ; a lot of different things. He gave me a
12 book, entitled Miracles for Breakfast, which is about
13 children, and it seemed like a good book. And I just
14 decided to check it out.

15 MR. BERFIELD: Now, these books, were they what
16 they call auditing courses --

17 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

18 MR. BERFIELD: Did you ever take one of these
19 courses?

20 MS. PETERSON: I took -- at one time -- up until
21 New Era Dianetics came out, which was delivered here at
22 the Fort Harrison a couple of years ago, I had taken the
23 largest amount of auditing that anyone could get.

24 MR. BERFIELD: And what did they do to help you?

1 MS. PETERSON: What did they do to help me?

2 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

3 MS. PETERSON: Oh, I mean, I still have the prob-
4 lems. I still get headaches and I still have hypogly-
5 cemia.

6 MR. BERFIELD: Now, all of the things that they
7 told you they would help you with they did not help you
8 with; is that right?

9 MS. PETERSON: That's right.

10 They told me I'd be able to communicate better
11 when, in fact, from my own personal experience and my
12 observation of other Scientologists, they can't communi-
13 cate as well because you learn a whole different language
14 and other people don't understand. I couldn't even
15 communicate with my own mother who I had always been very
16 close to. She didn't understand what I was saying, and
17 I didn't know how to tell her what it meant, really.

18 MR. BERFIELD: When you were taking all these audit-
19 ing courses and found out they didn't help you and you
20 went on, as I understand, to help other people regard-
21 ing -- wasn't there some doubt in your mind as to the
22 validity or the deception of these courses?

23 MS. PETERSON: I believed that I would get
24 handled at a different -- at the next level. In other

1 words, when I would complain about that I'd be having
2 problems, I was told that it was the next level. And
3 then I was told that, you know, well, particularly, I
4 would go clear, what they call clear, which is described
5 in Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health, that
6 this would take care of all the problems and that some-
7 where along the line it would get taken care of.

8 So, I believed this to be true at the time. After
9 I went clear and then I did above clear, which is what
10 they call OT Levels, one of the -- I know you don't want
11 to go into kind of the beliefs of it, so I'm a little
12 hesitant to go into it too heavily, but there's a certain
13 level that you reach that for me was very damaging as
14 far as my dependency upon Scientology.

15 After I took that particular level, I believed that
16 I needed more and more auditing to take care of the prob-
17 lem. It was not a problem that I had entered Scientology
18 to handle; in other words, it -- I hope I make myself
19 clear. But it's like I went in for various reasons. As
20 I went higher and higher, I began to forget about the
21 reasons why I came in and I became almost consumed with
22 handling this one certain area.

23 MR. BERFIELD: So, the purposes for which you went
24 into Scientology -- you never really accomplished them?

1 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

2 MR. BERFIELD: But, yet, you kept on with these
3 courses in hopes that they would help you; is that
4 correct?

5 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

6 I spent about forty thousand dollars in trying to
7 handle them.

8 MR. BERFIELD: Now, you made reference to Hubbard
9 saying -- was this direct conversation with him, or was
10 this just something communicated to you?

11 MS. PETERSON: Well, it would be -- I never had a
12 direct communication with Mr. Hubbard, but there was many,
13 many tapes by Mr. Hubbard. And there's also policies
14 that were written by Mr. Hubbard.

15 MR. BERFIELD: Now, we had a lot of testimony on
16 policies. Now, you -- I think you said Clearwater was
17 the Flag Ship or the head ship; is that correct?

18 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

19 MR. BERFIELD: And you were in Las Vegas?

20 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

21 MR. BERFIELD: So, you were, to a degree, in a
22 regional office, then; is that right?

23 MS. PETERSON: Yes. It's called an outer area is
24 what it's called.

1 MR. BERFIELD: I guess what I'm trying to get
2 straight in my mind is: How did you know for sure that
3 the policies that you had were Hubbard's policies? And
4 why didn't you tell him to stick them in his ear or
5 something like that?

6 MS. PETERSON: Well, I knew they were Hubbard's
7 policies because they were signed by -- you know, with
8 his name, and because Scientology operates on Mr.
9 Hubbard's policy. I mean, Scientology belongs to Mr.
10 Hubbard, and nothing is done without Mr. Hubbard's written
11 consent. I mean -- you know, it's not like Joe Blow
12 decides, you know, to do something; it's all Mr. Hubbard.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Well, there's a comparison here:
14 If it were the corporate world --

15 MS. PETERSON: The what? I didn't --

16 MR. BERFIELD: If you were in the corporate world
17 and you had a policy and you disagreed with it, you'd
18 work on changing it or doing something about it.

19 Did you ever think about that?

20 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Why didn't you do something about
22 it?

23 MS. PETERSON: I tried many times.

24 MR. BERFIELD: But again, did you have a right to

1 challenge these policies, to write back -- I guess, I
2 have to use the expression: How did you know that it
3 wasn't some clown like Jim Berfield that was writing up
4 these policies for you instead of L. Ron Hubbard?

5 MR. FLYNN: I might -- that's a good question. But
6 I might just point out at this point: The inquiry is into
7 the organization, so the relevancy of whether it was
8 Hubbard or the organization -- that's a proper focus. But
9 if the organization is practicing it, that's what the
10 focus of the inquiry should be. So, whether it was a
11 clown or whether it was Mr. Hubbard is somewhat irrelevant
12 if the organization did it from a legal point of view.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Okay.

14 But that's what I'm getting down to is that, you
15 know, that you just practiced it because it was Hubbard's
16 policy?

17 MS. PETERSON: Yes. You wouldn't -- there was
18 orders -- all the orders were based on Hubbard's policy.

19 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know if -- did everyone
20 practice this -- whatever the policy would be that
21 Hubbard had proclaimed?

22 MS. PETERSON: Yes. It -- all over. They're all
23 uniform. Scientology is Hubbard, as far as I'm concerned.
24 Anything else was considered what they call out tech, in

1 other words, out technology.

2 If you did something that's not based on Mr.
3 Hubbard's policy, you'd be sent either to Ethics or
4 what they call Cramming where you would be shown that
5 you were not practicing Scientology. It was called
6 either out tech or it was called squirrel tech.

7 MR. BERFIELD: Now, in some of your earlier testi-
8 mony, you also made mention of Mr. Walters and Mr.
9 Hartwell.

10 Are those the same two people who testified earlier
11 here?

12 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know that to be a fact that
14 they are the two who testified --

15 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

16 MR. BERFIELD: And in these -- you also said that
17 you were told that the Fair Game Policy was done away
18 with, but then when you got in there, you found out that
19 it still was in effect; is that correct?

20 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Didn't you at that time challenge
22 the truth and -- well, the truth of the whole organiza-
23 tion that they're telling you, "We've done away with it,
24 but, yet, we're still practicing it"?

1 MS. PETERSON: I was told that it caused bad
2 public relations to use the name Fair Game.

3 Also, I did at various times doubt many of the
4 things that were happening within the organization and
5 within Scientology in general. However, I still believed
6 mentally that I needed Scientology to get rid of the
7 problem that I had.

8 MR. BERFIELD: Now, I also understand you to say
9 that you were involved in the attacks on the Hartwells;
10 is that correct?

11 MS. PETERSON: Not publically, but sort of behind
12 the scenes, yes.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Didn't -- didn't you in your own
14 mind wonder whether there was something fair or square
15 about that?

16 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

17 MR. BERFIELD: Did you do anything about it?

18 MS. PETERSON: No.

19 MR. BERFIELD: You just accepted it as being the
20 way the company should be run or --

21 MS. PETERSON: I didn't think it should be run that
22 way; however, I felt there was nothing I could do about
23 it. And I -- at that point I was so indoctrinated into
24 Scientology that I felt that if I left Scientology that

1 I would die.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Did you actually -- this was in your
3 own mind that you would die?

4 MS. PETERSON: Yes. There -- that's part of some
5 of the training I received, that if certain phenomena
6 occur within a person that it means that they are out of
7 control and that they could die from that. And I believed
8 that that was conceivable that that would happen to me.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Were you ever involved in any of
10 these blown student situations?

11 MS. PETERSON: I was aware of the policy; however,
12 I did not practice it. I didn't agree with it. I was --
13 at the time I was in charge of the training in the organi-
14 zation, which is where the Blown Student Policy is
15 applied, I was not as indoctrinated as I was later and
16 I did not agree with the policy, therefore, I did not
17 practice it.

18 MR. BERFIELD: This thread that seems to run through
19 a lot of the conversation -- Scientology: If your
20 marriage comes between you and Scientology, then, Scien-
21 tology comes first; is that a fair --

22 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

23 MR. BERFIELD: I have no more.

24 MR. LeCHER: Mrs. Garvey.

1 MRS. GARVEY: You said you joined Scientology
2 because you thought it would do something for you.

3 Were you impressed with Mr. Hubbard's background
4 as published?

5 MS. PETERSON: Very much so, yes.

6 MRS. GARVEY: Were you -- when you joined, did you --
7 were you told that auditing was confidential?

8 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

9 MRS. GARVEY: And that it was based on those scientific
10 techniques?

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MRS. GARVEY: When you started in the Guardian
13 Office and saw how this information was being used, did
14 that not bother you in relationship to your own auditing
15 information?

16 MS. PETERSON: Yes, very much.

17 MRS. GARVEY: But you didn't have any -- there
18 wasn't anything you could do about it?

19 MS. PETERSON: I didn't feel at the time that there
20 was. I did do some questioning of the -- the man that
21 was in charge of the Information Bureau, basically -- they
22 gathered all the information. In other words, the Public
23 Relations Bureau would take it to the press or whatever.
24 The Information Bureau would gather it.

1 There's also filed what are called B 1 Files, which
2 is Branch 1 Files. And a short time after I was in
3 Scientology, I was asked to help go through these files.
4 And at that time I found that -- well, let me just back
5 up a little bit. When I first went into the Guardian's
6 Office and I saw auditing information being used, I was
7 told that it was because these people were enemies of the
8 Church and that they were attacking the Church and that
9 they had to be stopped, which I didn't agree with totally.
10 But somehow, if you can understand the state of mind I
11 was in, it made some sense to me and I accepted it to a
12 degree mentally.

13 A short while later I went through the Information
14 Bureau files, at which point I found that it wasn't just
15 the enemies or the people that were complaining about
16 Scientology. Scientologists who were actively in Scien-
17 tology contributing great amounts of either time or
18 money or both, files -- auditing information would be
19 kept in files on them. Anything that was considered to
20 be out security, which would mean that they left the back
21 door open to the fact that they had sex with someone
22 other than their husband, or that they had homosexual
23 experiences in their background, or that they were
24 involved in anything that Scientology considered to be

1 something that could be used against Scientology.

2 MRS. GARVEY: When you challenged some of these
3 policies, what happened to you?

4 MS. PETERSON: I was sent to Ethics on various
5 occasions and sent to Cramming.

6 MRS. GARVEY: You were sent to Cramming? What
7 happened in Cramming?

8 MS. PETERSON: That's where you're shown policies
9 on whatever it is you're complaining about, why it's okay,
10 why it's okay to be done, until you have this realization.
11 Whether it actually happens or not, you say you do. If
12 you say you do, then, it's fine.

13 MRS. GARVEY: So, you -- have you actually seen
14 written policies on the Fair Game and the Blown Student
15 and some of the other techniques by Mr. Hubbard?

16 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

17 MRS. GARVEY: Have you seen a written policy that
18 is in the Guardian Office on lying?

19 MS. PETERSON: I haven't seen the actual policy;
20 I've just seen it practiced.

21 MRS. GARVEY: What were you told when you joined
22 the Guardian Office that your duties were going to be?

23 MS. PETERSON: It was going to be establishing
24 Apple Schools and Narcanon drug programs was my main --

1 the Citizens' Commission on Psychiatric Abuses was also
2 mentioned. I didn't realize exactly what it meant at
3 the time.

4 MRS. GARVEY: So, your job -- you were told your
5 duty was going to be to establish these worthwhile
6 community organizations?

7 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

8 MRS. GARVEY: How much were you paid for that?

9 MS. PETERSON: It varied, depending on the gross
10 income for the week. I was one of the highest executives
11 for a three-state area, and I made anywhere between
12 nothing to maybe twenty, twenty-five dollars. An average
13 week would probably be about six dollars.

14 MRS. GARVEY: You were the highest paid, good,
15 good.

16 MS. PETERSON: No, one of the highest paid for
17 three states.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Three states.

19 MR. LeCHER: Twenty-six dollars, you say?

20 MS. PETERSON: No. The average income was about
21 six. I said, sometimes -- some weeks you were paid
22 nothing or maybe twenty, twenty-five; the average was
23 about six.

24 MRS. GARVEY: How many hours a week did you work?

1 MS. PETERSON: Again, that varied. Probably,
2 twelve, fifteen hours a day most of the time. Some-
3 times -- during one time period when the Hartwells were
4 causing what's called in Scientology a flap - in other
5 words, they were going to the press and that type of
6 thing - we worked for about twenty-three or twenty-four
7 days without a day off, twelve to fourteen hours a day.
8 And myself and Carole Garrity, who I already mentioned,
9 became ill at that time; we became -- we had bad colds.
10 And we were taken into the Assistant Guardian's Office,
11 who's in charge of the Guardian's Office, and we were
12 told that the reason we had become sick was because of
13 the FBI.

14 MRS. GARVEY: What year was this, do you remember?

15 MS. PETERSON: The Hartwells were -- I believe it
16 was '79.

17 MRS. GARVEY: When you -- you said you got out of
18 the Guardian Office. Were you routed out or did you just
19 walk out?

20 MS. PETERSON: Well, I -- I simply just said that
21 I was leaving, and that -- I had signed what's called a two and-a-
22 half-year contract - I wasn't on a billion-year contract -
23 and my contract expired, and I worked for some weeks
24 without being on a contract. I activated a new contract,

1 but because it was only, in effect, a couple of weeks --
2 and I just simply said I was going, that I would help,
3 but I couldn't continue the schedule I was and maintain
4 my marriage. And I wanted to stay married and keep my
5 children. So, I just basically walked out and --

6 MRS. GARVEY: So, they allowed you back?

7 MS. PETERSON: Yeah, I was allowed back in. And I
8 did quite a bit of work for them. That was --

9 MRS. GARVEY: How --

10 MS. PETERSON: -- part of the agreement.

11 MRS. GARVEY: How much longer before you left?

12 MS. PETERSON: About a year.

13 MRS. GARVEY: And why did you leave? What finally
14 freed you from the organization mentally?

15 MS. PETERSON: Well, I guess it was just an accumu-
16 lation of many things. I saw so many things and I saw
17 it becoming worse and worse. I also saw that the people
18 who had been represented to me as honest, ethical, law
19 abiding people were, indeed, guilty of crimes, which I
20 certainly did not agree with.

21 I saw that -- after being sort of free from there,
22 even though I was connected to a degree, I began to be
23 able to look at exactly what was happening in myself and
24 the people that I knew. And I saw that I was certainly

1 no better than when I got in Scientology; in fact, I was
2 much worse.

3 I was terrified to even discuss the possibility of
4 leaving Scientology with my own husband. I was afraid
5 that he would stay in Scientology. I was afraid that
6 he would write me up to the Guardian's Office and that
7 they would then come and take me away somewhere because
8 I had so much information. Guardian's Office staff mem-
9 bers were heavily, heavily under security at all times.
10 And I signed - I don't know how many - waivers of how I
11 would never, ever talk about the Guardian's Office to
12 anyone, and if I did, I would have to pay them a lot of
13 money.

14 MRS. GARVEY: Your husband, obviously, was having
15 doubt at the same time?

16 MS. PETERSON: Yes. I was unaware of it at the
17 time, until we discussed it.

18 MRS. GARVEY: Can you describe a little bit of the
19 harassment that you received once you left, and were
20 you given a freeloader's debt?

21 MS. PETERSON: I was never given a freeloader's
22 debt, no.

23 I -- once I left, I received a lot of phone calls
24 where people would just call and hang up. I also received

1 a note in my car with the words "Watch it" on it. Also,
2 a note was left in my mailbox that said, "Die." And I
3 received several phone calls that -- in the middle of
4 the -- my husband works at night, and I would receive
5 phone calls at one or two in the morning where a male
6 voice would say, "Die," and then they would hang up.
7 Also, at various times during the night, someone would
8 knock at my front door and there would be nobody there.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Did you have to fill out a security
10 check --

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MRS. GARVEY: -- the thing that's got a hundred
13 some questions or something like that on it?

14 MS. PETERSON: Many of them, yes.

15 MRS. GARVEY: Many of them.

16 MS. PETERSON: Oh, also, on the harassment-type
17 thing: Once -- after I had left Scientology, the man
18 that was in charge of the Information Bureau, who I have
19 already mentioned - he and I were quite good friends -
20 he and I got together, even though I had left Scientology.
21 I trusted him to -- in other words, I wasn't really
22 afraid to meet with him; I didn't think that he would
23 try to kidnap me or anything.

24 But when we got to discussing the harassment that

1 I had received, he tried to convince me that my attorney,
2 Michael Flynn, was the one responsible for it.

3 Oh, yeah, before I came here - I'm afraid to fly -
4 and before I came here, I received a phone call of a
5 crash. I assume it was supposed to be a plane crash; I
6 don't know exactly what it was, but it was just a crash.

7 MRS. GARVEY: And you needed that before you flew
8 like --

9 MS. PETERSON: I thought about it as the plane took
10 off.

11 MR. FLYNN: Evidence of that type may be relevant

12 MRS. GARVEY: Oh, yes, who would know of your fear
13 of flying?

14 MS. PETERSON: It was in my auditing files.

15 MR. FLYNN: And referring to the Mayor's earlier
16 comment about whether the leopard has changed its spots,
17 that particular evidence in the last five minutes would
18 be relevant right up to --

19 MRS. GARVEY: That came today -- or this week.

20 MR. LeCHER: When did you --

21 MRS. GARVEY: What was --

22 MR. LeCHER: -- leave -- let me just -- when did
23 you leave -- I just want to get this in the right time
24 frame. When did you leave the Guardian's Office?

1 MS. PETERSON: I left the Guardian's Office in 1979,
2 officially, as a staff member. But I was connected in
3 various ways up until July of 1980.

4 MR. LeCHER: You left Scientology July of 1980?

5 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

6 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

7 Mrs. Garvey.

8 MRS. GARVEY: Did you actually see the written
9 report on the Fair Game against a number of people: Mr.
10 Walters, Mr. Hartwell -- Mr. and Mrs. Hartwell?

11 MS. PETERSON: I saw --

12 MRS. GARVEY: You actually did see some of those?

13 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

14 I also saw copies of Mr. Hartwell's preclear,
15 auditing information, copies being made of it. And there
16 was an order on Tonja Burden to take her information to
17 the press, and attached to the order was a copy of her
18 auditing information.

19 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hatchett.

20 MR. HATCHETT: Listening to you, I think this is a
21 good question to ask you: Were you aware before coming
22 here that certain people were going to testify that you
23 yourself did elicit the order or were involved in the
24 dirty tricks? Did you know you were going to face them

1 when you came here?

2 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

3 MR. HATCHETT: Congratulations; that's what I want
4 to say to you. You must be very much dedicated to consent
5 to come in and testify under such conditions. That's my
6 personal comment to you.

7 MS. PETERSON: Thank you.

8 MR. HATCHETT: Seeing, in the Guardian's Office,
9 the heavy security, that must have been a place of great
10 power. Did you have that feeling at the time?

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes, only to the outside world of
12 Scientology, in other words, to other Scientologists and
13 to the outside world.

14 As far as feeling powerful within the Guardian's
15 Office, I suppose there are those feelings of that. But
16 you always knew that you were under orders from the
17 higher ups.

18 MR. HATCHETT: Can you give me an idea, after
19 looking at that order of some of those people, from the
20 best of your memory, what, for example, the Guardian
21 Office attack on Michael Flynn -- it must have been
22 written up: step one, step two, step three?

23 MS. PETERSON: Yes. There was -- there was also
24 a program to get Michael Flynn disbarred. I can't

1 remember if it was the same program as the -- what was
2 called the Oscar Program or not, but I can remember -- I
3 didn't read all the steps on it, but there was steps on
4 there to get him disbarred. There was also a step to
5 send letters to former colleagues of his about how
6 horrible he was, that he had this bizarre background that
7 maybe they weren't aware of.

8 MR. HATCHETT: So, this Guardian Office, undoubtedly,
9 ly, had a large budget to do all the things that were
10 supposed -- able to do.

11 Can you give us an idea of what it cost to run
12 these types of clandestine operations?

13 MS. PETERSON: I really -- I don't know how much
14 it cost; it cost a lot of money. I know that if there
15 was ever any money for -- if there was ever a request for
16 anything, plane fares to go back to Boston or to fly in
17 somebody from Salt Lake City to spy on Tonja Burden,
18 there was always money. When I was in the organization,
19 in the actual organization as opposed to the Guardian's
20 Office, you couldn't even get paper, money for paper, to
21 write down the auditing information. In other words,
22 the auditor -- when you're auditing, you would write down
23 what the person was saying. And staff, who made any-
24 where between nothing and six dollars a week, had to chip

1 in money to buy paper for this to occur.

2 MR. HATCHETT: Yet, there was always plenty of
3 money to do these other operations?

4 MS. PETERSON: Yeah, there sure was.

5 MR. HATCHETT: And, also, in a timely fashion, you
6 never had to wait?

7 MS. PETERSON: You could get it right away.

8 MR. HATCHETT: It's interesting to listen to you
9 about the vetting of material.

10 I think Mr. Flynn stated that he was going to
11 introduce this as evidence, did you not, Mr. Flynn?

12 MRS. GARVEY: He already did.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: He did.

14 MR. HATCHETT: Okay.

15 MR. FLYNN: I beg your pardon, Mr. Hatchett?

16 MRS. GARVEY: No, that's --

17 MR. HATCHETT: I've got my answer already, thank
18 you.

19 I have an idea about the Safe Environment Fund for
20 the protection of indicted Scientologists, that's some-
21 thing of a heavy fund, too --

22 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

23 MR. HATCHETT: -- in terms of --

24 MS. PETERSON: Yeah, there was -- I'm not sure

1 exactly how much, but many, many thousands of dollars.

2 Another really interesting thing is that we were
3 drilled to tell any public official, the press, or anyone
4 that we did not operate the Safe Environment Fund while
5 we were on what's called Post Time; in other words, we
6 were to say that it was totally separate, it was something
7 we were doing on our time. We were not allowed to say
8 that, in fact, it was a big part of our job.

9 MR. HATCHETT: The Guardian Office was directly
10 responsible to operate the Apple Schools --

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MR. HATCHETT: -- yet, they denied this?

13 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

14 MR. HATCHETT: Did they tell you why?

15 MS. PETERSON: We were told that the reason why was
16 that if the government and various officials found out
17 that Scientology was running, that there would be a lot
18 of problems because the government was out to get Scien-
19 tology.

20 MR. HATCHETT: Do you know for a fact whether or not
21 these schools may have been up to any state accreditation
22 standards?

23 MS. PETERSON: The ones that I was responsible for
24 were, yes; they were supposed to be. Whether they were or

1 not, I don't know, you know, everywhere else. But I know,
2 at least, mine were.

3 MR. HATCHETT: By the licensing agent, you know,
4 from some state or county or what not?

5 MS. PETERSON: Yes, we were. All -- as I said, all
6 the schools that I was responsible for all met up to all
7 the codes and everything.

8 MR. HATCHETT: All right.

9 Can you give me an idea what the average parent may
10 pay for the education of their child at that particular
11 school under your jurisdiction?

12 MS. PETERSON: It was -- I think it was about a
13 hundred and twenty or a hundred and thirty dollars a
14 month, which, at the time, was about what everybody was
15 paying for other schools in the area; it was about the
16 same.

17 MR. HATCHETT: That's all. Thank you.

18 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Shoemaker, do you have any ques-
19 tions?

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes.

21 Mrs. Peterson, I'd like to reiterate a couple of
22 the comments that you've made because I think they're
23 extremely significant. So, if I'm being repetitive,
24 please bear with me.

1 MS. PETERSON: Sure.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Can you describe the overall pur-
3 pose of the Guardian's Office, please?

4 MS. PETERSON: Well, as I said, it's various
5 bureaus, and each bureau has sort of a different purpose.
6 But the main purpose - there's a couple - the main one
7 is to keep everybody, other than Scientologists, away
8 from Scientology. In other words, if a public official
9 walked in through the front door of the Fort Harrison,
10 the person that then comes over to take you on a tour is
11 a Guardian's Office staff member, if they know that you're
12 a public official.

13 They don't want anyone outside of Scientology to
14 know what's going on. In fact, the Guardian's Office --
15 other Scientologists don't even know. Most Scientologists
16 have no idea, for instance, what happens to their preclear
17 information.

18 Another thing is to take care of the press, to
19 make sure that Scientology is well thought of so that
20 they can expand it and grow.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: And your responsibilities, while
22 you were in the Guardian's Office, were running the
23 conditions relating to these various types of special
24 groups?

1 MS. PETERSON: Yes. Although, as I said before,
2 I got involved in a lot of other things because of the --

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: Right.

4 MS. PETERSON: -- lack of personnel.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: But your responsibility, though,
6 was, in fact, control over those groups?

7 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that includes the Apple School,
9 Narcanon, Applied Scholastic Institute, Citizens' Commis-
10 sion for Human Rights, Gerus Society --

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- and Safe Environment Fund?

13 MS. PETERSON: Right.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: And it was all -- it would be
15 uniformly set up throughout the country -- throughout
16 the world that those types of activities would be in the
17 Guardian's Office?

18 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: You had made reference to the fact
20 that Mr. Hartwell's auditing files and so forth were sent
21 to the Las Vegas office.

22 Could you tell me where they came from, if you
23 know firsthand, and the year that they were sent?

24 MS. PETERSON: Okay.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: I'm sorry, Burden; I beg your
2 pardon.

3 MS. PETERSON: Oh, Tonja Burden?

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes.

5 MS. PETERSON: That was sent from Clearwater. Actu-
6 ally, it was sent from Clearwater to Los Angeles, to the
7 United States Guardian's Office, and then sent to the
8 Las Vegas Organization. That was in, I believe it was,
9 1979.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: The --

11 MS. PETERSON: Either '78 or '79.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: The types of operations that you
13 described, would your boss or who was head of the Guardian's
14 Office in Las Vegas have the authority to do one of those
15 himself, write one up and do it himself without any
16 instructions from higher up?

17 MS. PETERSON: No. You could write up a program,
18 however, it had to be sent to the United States Guardian's
19 Office to be approved. You weren't allowed to do any-
20 thing on your own.

21 In some instances, it would not only go to the
22 United States Guardian's Office but it would go to the
23 Worldwide Guardian's Office. It would depend on the type
24 of program and who was involved in it.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, any of those types of organiza-
2 tions would have had to have been signed off on by some-
3 one -- by the headquarters of the Guardian's Office?

4 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

5 In fact, most of the training the Guardian's Office
6 staff members received was received at the United States
7 Guardian's Office.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: The -- you had made reference a
9 while ago that some of the conversations that Mr. Alan
10 Hubbard was having with Mr. Hartwell was, in fact, being
11 taped.

12 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: And Mr. Hartwell had no knowledge
14 of that.

15 MS. PETERSON: As far as I know, he didn't, no.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: How do you know that they were
17 being taped?

18 MS. PETERSON: I saw the taping equipment on Mr.
19 Hubbard at one point and I also heard Mr. Hubbard trans-
20 cribing them several times.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: And it was the type of equipment
22 that would be hidden under clothes?

23 MS. PETERSON: Yes. I happened to walk into some-
24 where that I wasn't supposed to at one point and he had

1 his shirt off and he was pulling this off.

2 The tape was edited down, also, at one point.

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: And the Safe Environment Fund, which
4 was set up, I believe, as you described it, for the pur-
5 pose of -- was it donations, or how were the funds being
6 raised for this Safe Environment Fund to provide legal
7 funds for the Scientologists that were indicted?

8 MS. PETERSON: In a variety of ways. They would
9 have rallies and meetings and that type of thing and talk
10 about the indictes and how much money it was costing. And
11 then, the people were to give donations.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: Were they -- was it given or would
13 it have been forced on individuals?

14 MS. PETERSON: I don't think it was ever probably
15 physically forced, but they were made to feel that if
16 they didn't donate the money, that they were letting down
17 the organization. And what would happen to the organiza-
18 tion if these top people weren't there to defend them
19 against the government, what would happen?

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Were records kept or any kind of
21 published list in terms of who gave what or anything such
22 as that? I mean, that would be available, for instance,
23 to just the general membership.

24 MS. PETERSON: You mean, to other Scientologists?

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes.

2 MS. PETERSON: I really don't know; I don't remem-
3 ber if it was or not.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Are most of their efforts directed
5 towards the members in the Church or towards the public
6 people - I mean, the people that are outside of Scien-
7 tology - in terms of rallies and so forth?

8 MS. PETERSON: Mostly, other Scientologists,
9 although, I believe that they made some sort of an
10 affiliation with other groups that were interested.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: But it was clearly stated that the
12 was the purpose of raising this money?

13 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Mayor, I don't have any more
15 questions.

16 Thank you very much.

17 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Calderbank, do you have any ques-
18 tions?

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Yes.

20 Just very quickly, then: Do you substantiate the
21 testimony of Mr. -- of the Hartwells, Walters, and Van
22 Schaick as far as dirty tricks and activities that you
23 saw come across the Guardian Office desk?

24 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: And do you substantiate that the
2 Guardian's Office tried to frame or plant criminal activi-
3 ties on people that they described in sworn testimony?

4 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: And you also said that there was
6 a lot of editing of tapes of undercover taping that were
7 edited to mislead people, like, the papers in Mr. Hart-
8 well's extortion attempt to make it seem like there was a
9 criminal activity being done?

10 MS. PETERSON: I know of one -- the one instance
11 that I discussed; I don't know about many times --

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

13 But that one specific instance --

14 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: -- they edited it down for that?

16 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: To follow up on Mr. Hatchett
18 and Mr. Shoemaker's comments, the money for the GO -- you
19 said substantial amounts of money were used for this
20 operation, that you could get typewriters when auditing
21 couldn't even get paper; isn't that true?

22 MS. PETERSON: For typewriters?

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah, or for other equipment. You
24 said substantial money came in the Guardian's Office or

1 they spent a lot of money on training to tickets to the
2 equipment that was used to tape Mr. Hartwell.

3 MS. PETERSON: Oh, yeah, I was -- I suppose type-
4 writers, also. But I, mostly, was referring to, like,
5 airfares and paying the rent of Russ Andrews in Tonja
6 Burden's building, even getting in a certain amount of
7 money so that he could survive; that type of thing.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Where did the money come from?

9 MS. PETERSON: It was sent from the organization;
10 in other words, a certain amount of money would go into
11 the Guardian's Office.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: So, you got -- what organization are
13 you talking about?

14 MS. PETERSON: Well, as people would come in the
15 front door and they would pay for their auditing training,
16 it was in the -- it was in the actual organization. And
17 then, a certain amount of that money was sent each week
18 over --

19 MR. CALDERBANK: All right.

20 MS. PETERSON: -- to the Guardian's Office. There
21 was a -- there were separate accounts and that type of
22 thing, three or four different accounts.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Oh, so, the money that came in from
24 say, auditing, then, directly went -- or was part of the

1 money that the Guardian's Office used?

2 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: And that money, then, may have
4 been used to bug Mr. Hartwell or set up Mr. Flynn in
5 Operation Oscar?

6 MS. PETERSON: Yes. That's where all the money
7 came from; it was from the money that people either paid
8 for auditing, training, or books. It didn't come from
9 outside sources; it always came from auditing --

10 MR. CALDERBANK: These money sources, did you know
11 at the time that you were in the Guardian's Office that
12 they were elicited as donations?

13 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you know that these were tax-
15 exempt donations for a tax-exempt organization?

16 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Was it common knowledge throughout
18 the organization that this money was being used for these
19 purposes --

20 MS. PETERSON: Oh, no.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: -- even in the GO Office?

22 MS. PETERSON: In the Guardian's Office, yes; in
23 the regular organization, no. Most staff members have no
24 idea.

1 There's a booklet written by Mr. Hubbard, called
2 "What Your Fees Buy," and it tells you about how you
3 give it to run the organization with the money and it's
4 used to help pay attorneys' fees against the attacks by
5 the government and that type of thing. But it doesn't
6 say anything about what your fees really do buy.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: And you heard -- when did you
8 first hear the Hartwells? Did you hear the Hartwells'
9 testimony, the other testimony that was given to this
10 body when they gave it?

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Who was your AGPRO during the time
13 that you served there or the Guardian's Office Public
14 Relations Officer?

15 MS. PETERSON: Who was my what?

16 MR. CALDERBANK: AGPRO?

17 MRS. GARVEY: The Assistant Guardian --

18 MS. PETERSON: Oh, the Assistant Guardian for
19 Public Relations?

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Officer, right.

21 MS. PETERSON: Carole Garrity.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Carole Garrity?

23 MS. PETERSON: Yeah. Although, some people came in from
24 the United States Guardian's Office to help handle the problems

1 at various times.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: Who was your AGI during that time,
3 your Assistant Guardian of Intelligence?

4 MS. PETERSON: Well, there was three. It started
5 out, first, Hamilton in the beginning, and then -- Bruce
6 Hamilton was taken out of the area because he didn't
7 handle the problem, and a girl was sent in from the
8 United States Guardian's Office by the name of Julie
9 Bergman, and then a guy by the name of Dan Zalens then
10 took over.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

12 And because of policy, well entrenched policy,
13 you're saying that these people could -- had to have known
14 as to what was happening during their time, what was
15 happening to people like the Hartwells with the Fair
16 Game Policy being put into effect?

17 MS. PETERSON: Are you asking: Did other Scien-
18 tologists know about it?

19 MR. CALDERBANK: No. Did these people that were in
20 charge know about it?

21 MS. PETERSON: Of course they knew about it; they
22 ordered it.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: And I see a pattern shaping up
24 with the GO and it goes back to the training routine of

1 how to lie to someone.

2 Even though you set up and ran the schools, the
3 Gerus Society, et cetera, you were actually told that
4 they were not -- that you were not involved, basically,
5 that you would help, et cetera, that you were told directly to
6 say, "No," you did not run them, you did not set them up,
7 et cetera?

8 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: And when you worked on these pro-
10 grams, Scientology covert programs, you were told that
11 you were doing it on your own and you were not part of
12 the organization, it was your own time; is that correct?

13 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: And -- so, basically, adhere to that
15 policy of lying to government officials or lying, that this
16 is an example of it being carried out?

17 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Would this policy be deviated from
19 at all in Scientology?

20 MS. PETERSON: No.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: All --

22 MS. PETERSON: As a matter of fact, I mentioned
23 about Don Cooper, who was an agent on Mr. Walters and
24 the Hartwells. He -- when his cover was blown, after

1 myself and Carole Garrity left Scientology, he signed an
2 affidavit, which I later saw, that said that he was acting
3 pretty much on his own; in other words, he volunteered
4 that he was -- he was doing it.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: But you knew firsthand that that
6 was not the case, that he was part of a program financed
7 by Scientology?

8 MS. PETERSON: That's true.

9 He later -- also, after his cover was blown, his
10 freeloader debt was cancelled. He owed a great deal of
11 money. He had left on the ship and had a humongous free-
12 loader debt, and because of his dedicated service, spy
13 service, his freeloader debt was cancelled.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: And so, getting back to Mr.
15 Berfield's position on policy, you know, your policies
16 always have a reward and punishment in the corporate
17 structure.

18 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: And if you follow policy -- or was
20 policy always followed from the Source? Or did the
21 Source always write policy, L. Ron Hubbard?

22 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: And was what the Source said
24 followed throughout the world in every organization --

1 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: -- his policy was followed?

3 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

4 Now, there were some policies that were written
5 by other people, but Mr. Hubbard's policies always took
6 top priority. In other words, if there was conflicting
7 information in two policies, you'd always follow Mr.
8 Hubbard's; his was the senior on the area.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: And did you ever see a policy ever
10 not rigidly adhered to?

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: You did? And what was the punish-
13 ment for that? Was there a punishment for not following
14 policy?

15 MS. PETERSON: Yes. You were either sent to
16 Cramming or Ethics.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: And was it a severe punishment for
18 Scientologists?

19 MS. PETERSON: It would depend on the severity of
20 the problem.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: So, if you did not follow policy
22 as a corporate structure throughout the entire Scientology
23 organization, there was a specific punishment? And if
24 you did follow policy, such as following out a program,

1 Operation Oscar, to get Mr. Flynn disbarred, you were
2 given an award or reward?

3 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: And that was a pretty well struc-
5 tured policy in itself, reward and punishment?

6 MS. PETERSON: Yes. In fact, it's in some of the
7 Ethics policies: it talks about rewards and punishments,
8 and rewarding what they call upstats, which is up statis-
9 tics, people who follow policy. It's in the Ethics
10 policies.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: Is the Fair Game considered one
12 of the punishments for out policy people?

13 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: And you said that you questioned
15 some of the policies or some of things you were doing
16 but you decided not to change it or you couldn't change
17 it.

18 Why is that? Was it so rigid -- or why?

19 MS. PETERSON: Well, it was rigid and it was what
20 Ron wanted.

21 You have to understand that the people in Scien-
22 tology do what Ron wants. And if they think that Ron
23 wants whatever it is they're doing, whether they per-
24 sonally disagree with it or not, they'll do it anyway.

1 The ones that don't leave or they get kicked out.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: But if they don't leave and they're
3 not Fair Game at the time, then, people do not do things
4 as a lark; they do it as a result of a specific policy
5 and a specific program laid out in Scientology. And this
6 is the way it goes no matter where you are in the country?

7 MS. PETERSON: That's correct.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: And, finally, in the area of these
9 schools and front groups: Would you say front groups is
10 an apropos description of them?

11 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: The Gerus Society: We have a very
13 elderly population here in Pinellas County. Is the Gerus
14 Society active here in Pinellas County?

15 MS. PETERSON: I really don't know.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever see the Gerus Society
17 in Pinellas County?

18 MS. PETERSON: No.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay. That's all I have.

20 MR. LeCHER: At the peak of your career and your
21 earning power, with all this study, you were making
22 twenty-six dollars a week, correct?

23 MRS. GARVEY: On a good week.

24 MR. LeCHER: On a good week.

1 MS. PETERSON: That would have been a real good
2 week.

3 MR. LeCHER: Yet, you testified that you paid forty
4 thousand dollars into Scientology while you were working
5 there?

6 MS. PETERSON: Between my husband and myself, yes.

7 MR. LeCHER: I just wonder how you can make, at the
8 peak of your career, twenty-six thousand dollars and you
9 had forty thousand -- twenty-six dollars a week, yet,
10 you had forty thousand dollars spent.

11 Is that something that you accumulate prior to
12 becoming a Scientologist?

13 MS. PETERSON: Well, my husband and I had been
14 married for several years before we got into Scientology.

15 MR. LeCHER: Yeah.

16 MS. PETERSON: And we had some money, and we had a
17 house that we could finance.

18 MR. LeCHER: So, then, you had to -- you refinanced
19 your house and things like that to afford to get this
20 money --

21 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

22 MR. LeCHER: -- to take more courses?

23 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

24 MR. LeCHER: How long were you in the Guardian's

1 Office?

2 MS. PETERSON: I was a staff member almost a year
3 and then almost a year, also, as a -- just as a worker.

4 MR. LeCHER: As I understand, as a member of the
5 Guardian's Office, you learned to lie and to give mis-
6 information.

7 How do we know you're telling the truth now? And
8 do you think any of the witnesses that have testified
9 could possibly be dead agents?

10 MS. PETERSON: Well, first of all, that -- as far
11 as you -- how do you know whether I'd lie or not, I guess
12 you just have to take my word for it. I mean, I would
13 hardly, realistically, fly all the way down here when I'm
14 afraid to fly and sit in front of a bunch of people and,
15 you know, in front of television and admit to all the
16 things that I was involved in that I'm certainly not
17 proud of.

18 As far as the other people being dead agents, I
19 don't know exactly what you mean.

20 MR. LeCHER: Well, I may be using the term wrong,
21 but dead agenting to me meant that we may be set up, that
22 someone may have come forward to testify to put Scien-
23 tology in a negative light when, actually, they may be
24 setting us up, to be outrageous, which then could be

1 verified if they were not telling the truth and make
2 Scientology look good.

3 MS. PETERSON: Oh, I see what you mean.

4 I don't know. The people from Las Vegas that I
5 personally know, I realize that they're -- I mean, I
6 know they're on the square.

7 MR. LeCHER: As far as you know, this is not --

8 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

9 MR. LeCHER: You mentioned a public official's back-
10 ground could be checked.

11 How would you check the background of any public
12 official on this front table?

13 MS. PETERSON: Well, there's two ways of doing it.
14 The first way is called overt data collection, where you
15 would go to - I don't know - the public library and look
16 at some newspaper clippings and voters' registration.
17 You'd check to see if they have any kind of an arrest
18 record. You'd check around to find out if they were
19 connected in any way to a mental health organization.
20 That type of thing.

21 There was also -- it was called covert data collec-
22 tion. I really don't know how you do that; I was not
23 allowed to know that.

24 MR. LeCHER: If you had something on me, how would

1 you disperse that to the people to embarrass me?

2 MS. PETERSON: Well --

3 MR. LeCHER: To the press or to the people at large.

4 MS. PETERSON: The Information Bureau would collect
5 the information in one of the two ways I mentioned and
6 they would then send it over to Public Relations. And
7 it would just depend on what the problem was, how it was
8 handled. I mean, perhaps, if the PR person was confront-
9 ing you and they knew that you had a mistress or some-
10 thing, they might just, in passing, mention something
11 about people that have mistresses or something. That
12 would be one way.

13 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

14 Just one more and then -- you did all these things --
15 well, then, you went along with all this mistreating of
16 people to get Scientology -- or to get more into it
17 because of the - I shouldn't say faith, but - the belief
18 in the organization; is that correct?

19 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

20 MR. LeCHER: One other thing: What about coded
21 telex with reference to Betty Orsini, who, I believe, was
22 for the Saint Petersburg Times, and did a story originally
23 exposing the Church of Scientology. I see here you sent
24 reviewed coded telexes about Betty Orsini.

1 Can you tell me anything about that?

2 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

3 There was a time period when I was receiving and
4 sending all the telexes. And at one point we received a
5 telex from the Fort Harrison Guardian's Office and it was
6 coded and I then decoded it. And I can't remember the
7 exact terminology of it, but it was something to the
8 effect that Betty Orsini was in town and -- or, no, it
9 said that she was coming to town and what time she would
10 be arriving and she had to be kept an eye on.

11 I gave this information to Alan Hubbard, who I
12 already mentioned, and Julie Bergman, who I also men-
13 tioned, who worked in the United States Guardian's Office.
14 And I asked them who Betty Orsini was, and they told me
15 that she was one of the biggest SPs in the planet and that
16 they were going to have find somebody really trustworthy
17 to follow her and that type of thing to see what she was
18 up to.

19 They were afraid that she was going to get in con-
20 tact with the Hubbards -- or with the Hartwells and Mr.
21 Walters. As a matter of fact, they were very concerned
22 about that.

23 MR. LeCHER: I see.

24 Okay. That's it, unless you have something you want

1 to add, Mrs. Garvey.

2 MRS. GARVEY: Just one: Do you have any knowledge
3 whether Broderick and Cooper were ever trained in Clear-
4 water?

5 MS. PETERSON: Don Cooper is in Clearwater right
6 now; I saw him last night.

7 MRS. GARVEY: That must have made you feel good.

8 MS. PETERSON: The interesting part about it was
9 that I was with Mr. Walters at the time. Mr. Walters and
10 I were taking a walk and we saw him. He came out and
11 said, "Hi."

12 MRS. GARVEY: Were any other of the higher ups in
13 the Guardian Office in your area have any training here in
14 Clearwater that you would know of or spend any time?

15 MS. PETERSON: Well, a man right now by the name of
16 Bob Anderson, who is the Assistant Guardian in Las
17 Vegas -- he came originally from the Guardian's Office
18 here. He held a position here; I'm not sure whether he
19 was the Assistant Guardian here or not, but he was in
20 the Guardian's Office. He was sent to Las Vegas to take
21 care of the problem.

22 MR. LeCHER: Well, so, I guess, in conclusion, you
23 might be saying that Scientology has been trying to dupe
24 the press or the people for quite a long time?

1 MS. PETERSON: Yes.

2 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

3 I appreciate your coming, my colleagues, too, and
4 you shed a lot of light on the issues, especially, from
5 coming from the Guardian's Office and how it relates to
6 the Hartwells and the other people who we have listened
7 to.

8 Thank you.

9 MR. FLYNN: Mayor, at this time, I would point out,
10 for the record, that some of the documents pertaining to
11 covert data collection have been marked as Exhibits 14,
12 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, and, specifically, the document on
13 lying, TRL, has been marked as Exhibit 13. I will have
14 testimony at a later point on the individual who was in
15 B 1, who did covert data collection through such things
16 as breaking and entering.

17 At this point in time, I would like to introduce
18 an Affidavit of Carole Garrity, to whom the witness has
19 just referred, and I will read that affidavit into the
20 record.

21 "I, Carole Garrity, being first duly sworn, depose
22 and say: I was a member of the Church of Scientology
23 from April 1975 through July 1980, and during that time
24 I became a staff member and worked full-time for the

1 Scientology organization from August 1976 through July
2 1980.

3 "Between November 1978 and July 1980, I was a member
4 of the Guardian's Office of the Church of Scientology.
5 The Guardian's Office is more commonly referred to as the
6 GO by Scientologists. It's responsible for intelligence
7 gathering, covert operations and activities, spying, and
8 public relations. The Guardian's Office administers front
9 groups, such as schools and drug programs which are
10 designed to make money. The Guardian's Office headquar-
11 ters in the United States is in California. However, the
12 Guardian's Office has the power to go into a local Scien-
13 tology church and literally take over any section of it
14 or the entire local church, if necessary. This is covered
15 in the policy letter written by L. Ron Hubbard, entitled
16 'The Guardian.'

17 "The Guardian's Office activities are conducted
18 pursuant to a Scientology policy entitled the Fair Game
19 Doctrine which states: The Fair Game may be deprived of
20 property or injured by any means by any Scientologist,
21 may be tricked, sued, or lied to, or destroyed.

22 "I have personal knowledge of Scientology organiza-
23 tions actively and covertly conducted operations against
24 Attorney Michael Flynn in an attempt to destroy him and

1 thereby eliminate him as a representative of those indi-
2 viduals victimized by the Scientology organization. One
3 such operation occurred between January and July 1980,
4 where the Guardian's Office conducted a series of covert
5 operations to infiltrate the law office of Michael J.
6 Flynn by placing a plant whose code name was Oscar and
7 whose real name was William Broderick. The Guardian's
8 Office devised a second covert operation to stop Attorney
9 Flynn's client, LaVenda Van Schaick, from speaking out
10 against the Scientology organization. The program was
11 code-named Shake and Bake and, pursuant to program, GO
12 agents were sent to Massachusetts to interrogate Ms.
13 Van Schaick and try to encourage her to divorce her hus-
14 band and to fire Attorney Flynn.

15 "The Guardian's Office perused Ms. Van Schaick's
16 auditing files, which contained the most personal and
17 intimate details of her life, and extracted confidential
18 disclosures for the purpose of blackmail and extortion.
19 The practice of reviewing confidential auditing files and
20 extracting private and intimate details of an individual's
21 life is a common Scientology practice. The data gleaned
22 from an unsuspecting individual's files are transmitted to
23 California headquarters for extortion and blackmail. This
24 practice occurs regularly.

1 "I have personal knowledge of auditing information
2 being sent to Clearwater and transmitted through Clear-
3 water for this purpose. On one occasion I received a
4 Guardian's Office order instructing me to remove confi-
5 dential information from Tonja Burden's file, a woman
6 suing the Church of Scientology, and release it to the
7 media. I executed the order and brought the information
8 to the Las Vegas Review Journal.

9 "I became upset and in fear when I learned that
10 eleven top leaders of Scientology had been convicted of
11 felonies, including Mary Sue Hubbard, the Founder's wife.
12 I do not agree with Scientology practices which condone
13 burglaries, electronic surveillance, spying on former
14 members and others to deceive the critics of Scientology,
15 and all the other unlawful and underhanded conduct that
16 the release of the documents in the FBI raid revealed to
17 the national media.

18 "I left the Church of Scientology on July 18, 1980.

19 "Dated this 28th day of April 1982, Carole Garrity."

20 This will be marked as the next exhibit.

21 (The Affidavit of Carole Garrity
22 was marked as Exhibit No. 46, as of
this date.)

23 MR. LeCHER: For information, do you want to break
24 or do you want continue on going at this point in time?

1 MR. FLYNN: Perhaps, if we could take a shorter
2 break than our usual break, an hour instead of two hours?

3 MR. LeCHER: We normally come back at two.

4 Commissioners and staff, would you like to come back
5 at one?

6 Is that all right with Vision Cable?

7 This meeting is recessed for one hour.

8 (Whereupon, the luncheon recess was
9 taken.)

10
11 Afternoon Session

12
13 MR. LeCHER: Commissioners, staff, consultants,
14 and ladies and gentlemen, press, welcome back to the
15 second half of the hearings today in the city with respect
16 to the Church of Scientology.

17 Again, we will have the -- give the same opportunity
18 to the Church of Scientology this Monday and hope that
19 they will participate.

20 We are waiting now for the Commissioners to return
21 from their lunch break.

22 Do you have about another additional three or four
23 witnesses, Mr. Flynn?

24 MR. FLYNN: I do. But I'm going to call a very

1 short witness who's going to make a statement about one
2 thing. We're not going to go into her background; it's
3 very extensive and she could say a lot of things about
4 the entire subject matter. She's going to be called for
5 one specific purpose, and her testimony will probably
6 take a minute or two minutes, and you can ask her, as
7 always, whatever you like. And then, we're going to seek
8 to corroborate that testimony at a later date, the day
9 that it's going to be sent to the Commission.

10 We just recently learned about the information, and
11 I'd just like to get it on the record. It's hearsay,
12 but this is an investigative proceeding, so it could lead
13 to these affidavits from other individuals who could not
14 be here today. So, I'm just going to put her on for two
15 minutes for that --

16 MR. LeCHER: Should all the witnesses still be
17 sworn in?

18 MR. FLYNN: Absolutely.

19 MR. LeCHER: All right.

20 Will you bring in your witness, Mr. Flynn?

21 MR. FLYNN: Sharon McKee, please.

22
23 SHARON MCKEE, a witness herein,
24 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of

1 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

2 MR. LeCHER: Mrs. McKee?

3 MRS. McKEE: Yes, Sharon McKee; I'm from Connecti-
4 cut.

5 MR. LeCHER: You're from Connecticut.

6 Mrs. McKee, I must ask you the same standard ques-
7 tions that I've asked every other witness.

8 Number one: Are you appearing here today to testi-
9 fy under oath voluntarily?

10 MRS. McKEE: Yes, I am.

11 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
12 testimony, other than the expenses for coming to Clear-
13 water?

14 MRS. McKEE: No, I haven't.

15 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
16 Church of Scientology?

17 MRS. McKEE: No, I do not.

18 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have
19 a lawsuit against you?

20 MRS. McKEE: No.

21 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
22 should state anything but the truth or has anyone
23 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

24 MRS. McKEE: Absolutely not.

1 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

2 Mr. Flynn.

3 MR. FLYNN: Go ahead.

4 MRS. McKEE: This would be in the end -- the end
5 of the summer or the beginning of the fall of 1981. A
6 friend of mine - his name was Gordon Karas - had recently
7 come home from Los Angeles. He'd been on his advanced
8 courses, and out there he met a lady named Elaine Segal
9 and they just had become friends.

10 Elaine Segal works for Branch 1 of the Guardian's
11 Office, the Investigative Bureau in Boston. My friend
12 went up to Boston, I think, just to visit and stopped
13 into the Church there and saw her and they started
14 chatting. What she said to him is that she would like
15 him to move up to Boston for the purpose of not actually
16 becoming a student, but Elaine would provide documents
17 in a local college to prove that he was - give him a
18 background, a cover story - that he was actually a
19 student in a Boston college, and she wanted Gordon to go
20 out with Michael Flynn's secretary.

21 I don't know that she specifically said to gather
22 data or not, but Gordon is a very personable, handsome
23 young man and she wanted him to start dating this woman
24 and get to know Michael Flynn's secretary, hopefully, to

1 become involved.

2 MR. FLYNN: That's all at this point. And at that
3 time I was working with the city in preparation of the
4 report to this Commission, the period of time in which
5 she testified about. And at a later point in time we'll
6 try to tie the information together for you.

7 MR. LeCHER: Apparently, you're trying to establish
8 a pattern with this?

9 MR. FLYNN: That's correct.

10 I have - this is hearsay information - I have had
11 information for some time that the Church of Scientology
12 had the report to this Commission sometime in advance
13 of its public presentation.

14 MR. LeCHER: Thank you very much.

15 Is there anything -- I guess that's it, then.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. Flynn, did the Church have
17 any documents or any other thing in its possession at
18 any time since we -- or since you first made contact
19 with the city that would show that they have been
20 collecting data or looking into the city's activities
21 with respect to this?

22 MR. FLYNN: The Church, pursuant to a variety of
23 legal proceedings in which we are involved, produced,
24 pursuant to court order, some eight thousand documents

1 of which the Church -- which are directly from the files
2 in my office. The Church claims they were taken from a
3 dumpster, which is on a locked compound - a locked condo-
4 minium compound - with a twenty-four-hour security guard
5 on -- in my office compound.

6 That matter is now in litigation. And at some point
7 it could become a subject of investigation by the appro-
8 priate authorities in Pinellas County, because some of
9 the documents pertained to correspondence and communica-
10 tion with members of this Commission, the City Council,
11 the City Manager, the City Attorney. And some of the
12 documents pertain directly to my work with this city and
13 some documents pertain directly to contact that I had
14 with the -- Mr. Russell's office, the Pinellas County
15 State's Attorney.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: So, they were confidential?

17 MR. FLYNN: Absolutely. And they were in possession
18 of -- some eight thousand of them were in the possession
19 of the Church when the court ordered them to be turned
20 over.

21 The next witness is Scott Mayer.

22
23 SCOTT MAYER, a witness herein,
24 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of

1 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

2 MR. LeCHER: Scott Mayer is it?

3 MR. MAYER: Yes, sir.

4 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Mayer, are you appearing here
5 today to testify under oath voluntarily?

6 MR. MAYER: Yes, I am.

7 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
8 testimony, other than expenses for coming to Clearwater?

9 MR. MAYER: Not at all.

10 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
11 Church of Scientology?

12 MR. MAYER: No.

13 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have
14 a lawsuit against you?

15 MR. MAYER: Yes.

16 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
17 should state anything but the truth or has anyone
18 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

19 MR. MAYER: Not at all.

20 MR. LeCHER: Would you like to make a statement?

21 MR. MAYER: Yes, I would.

22 I find it a little bit difficult to distill twelve
23 years of experience with the Church, and I was a senior
24 executive with the Church for approximately seven of

1 those years. So, to distill all of that information
2 into a small period of time is kind of difficult.

3 So, I prepared an outline of things that I would
4 like to touch on and - in kind of a rapid sequence - and
5 after that's through, I'm willing to answer questions
6 about any of these areas I touch on, if that's agreeable
7 to you.

8 MR. LeCHER: Yes, sir.

9 Why don't you just follow your outline and we can
10 ask you questions when you complete your outline.

11 MR. MAYER: All right.

12 I, basically, just wanted to let you know what I
13 was doing. I worked on an on-call basis as a legal
14 assistant and an administrative assistant for the City
15 of Santa Monica in the City Attorney's Office and the
16 Environmental Services area, and I worked for -- also,
17 as a consultant to the Internal Revenue Service in the
18 U.S. tax case that's been going on for some time now.
19 And I worked with the senior counselor for the IRS during
20 that tax case as consultant.

21 The tax case I'm referring to is the time period
22 1968 through '71 in the U.S. Tax Court, Judge Sterrit
23 presiding. It's the Church of Scientology against the
24 Internal Revenue Service.

1 In terms of getting into the Sea Organization, I
2 entered the Sea Organization as a result of having a
3 ship's master training program being offered to me. At
4 one time, during the Viet Nam War, I was on a navigation
5 team flagship in the Seventh Fleet and used to run air-
6 craft carriers in and out of various harbors around the
7 world, so I had quite a bit of ship experience when I
8 was first exposed to Scientology. And I was offered a
9 training program that would get me a master's certificate,
10 and I went in on that basis, that and an educational
11 program.

12 What I want to do real quickly here is just give
13 you some sort of a background on what I did because I
14 went all over the world for the Church for a long time,
15 and, basically, on a trouble-shooting basis. And the
16 main point that I think I really want to stress here -
17 bring out from an insider's point of view - is the overall
18 administrative structure of the Church.

19 There's a great deal of publicity that's put out
20 that your individual churches are corporate bodies unto
21 themselves with their own board of directors. And many
22 of the boards of directors are on the planet that they
23 publicize, and I worked with those directors. And they
24 were just common, everyday staff members who signed

1 papers when it was necessary.

2 So, I want to kind of go over the post areas that
3 I've held in my job so that you can see what kind of a
4 background I had. And it will probably make it a little
5 bit easier for you to ask direct questions later.

6 I have been at one time or another everything from
7 a bodyguard to the now deceased Quentin Hubbard to the
8 fleet captain for the Hubbard cruiseships on the west
9 coast; I was an executive trouble-shooter for top manage-
10 ment of the Church; I went on a few missions out of
11 Clearwater under control of the Church of Scientology;
12 and as an administrative director, in other words, as a
13 command team.

14 The basic command of the organization, for the
15 entire Church of Scientology, when I left in 1966, was
16 situated right here --

17 MRS. GARVEY: '76.

18 MR. MAYER: -- excuse me -- was situated here in
19 Clearwater, and had been on the Flagship Apollo. I was
20 the ship's manager just prior to the move here, and part
21 of my job was getting the ship ready to come in here.

22 I did approximately eighteen successful missions
23 for the senior top management of the Church all over the
24 world, including South Africa, Scotland, Manchester, Saint

1 Hill in England.. I worked with Guardian's Office staff
2 members. I worked with Jane Kember; I worked with Mo
3 Budlong. I did an intelligence mission in Scotland for
4 the Church while I was there.

5 Jane Kember was the Guardian for the Church of
6 Scientology, the head of the Guardian's Office below
7 Mary Sue Hubbard. Mary Sue Hubbard was Commodore's Staff
8 Guardian, which the Commodore's Staff were the assistants
9 to the Commodore, to Ron, in each of the divisional areas
10 of the Church: finance, dissemination, public relations.
11 Ron had a staff member, Commodore's Staff, for each one
12 of those areas.

13 Here in Clearwater, they did evaluations on a week-
14 ly basis for the entire worldwide network of the Church.
15 On the basis of the financial well-being of the various
16 organizations around the world, missions - people who
17 were top-management trained - would go out to various
18 organizations to back the income back up if it was down.
19 And your whole control or command information center for
20 those evaluations centered in Tampa after they moved
21 here and then Flag was moved into the Fort Harrison Hotel.

22 So, that's just a little kind of a background on
23 the type of thing I did. I acted, primarily, as a
24 trouble-shooter, and as things were going on, I was sent

1 out.

2 The reason I left Scientology, by the way, was
3 because of the things that I saw and participated in
4 through my tenure with the Church. It got to the point
5 where I could no longer in my own mind justify what the
6 Church's policy in handling government agencies and
7 society was; they were allegedly there to save. I could
8 no longer reconcile that with the stated aims of the
9 Church. So, I resigned from the Sea Organization while
10 on leave of absence in 1976, and I was subsequently
11 expelled from the Church.

12 Part of the reason I wanted to come down here is
13 that I had talked to Martin Cohen, who's the senior
14 counselor for the IRS in the tax case, about a week or
15 so ago. And I asked him if there was anything that I
16 could, you know, do for them while I was down there in
17 terms of bringing back information. One of the things
18 that he said to me is "You know, Scott, you've been a year
19 at this now" - and I'm still on an on-call basis as a
20 consultant. He said, "If I had realized what you were
21 trying to tell me a year ago, we could have had a whole
22 different tack in this case."

23 And I have a -- and I have to admit to you that
24 I've stayed pretty well in hiding for the last three

1 years, after I had an experience when my car was blown
2 up on Christmas Eve in 1978 in front of a place where the
3 Church thought I was staying, but I was living elsewhere.
4 I had planted that information with the Church so that
5 I'd know if they were trying to contact me.

6 So, I've stayed pretty much in hiding. And I feel
7 that these hearings are a chance for a little bit of
8 light to come out on this so that people who are out in
9 the field now -- and I know a lot of them. I'm small
10 potatoes compared to what some others out in the field
11 have done, things that they've done and experienced. And
12 I would like very much for them to feel free to be able
13 to rejoin society and contribute to it, because that, in
14 essence, was their main concern and reason for going into
15 the Church in the first place: it was to help evolve the
16 planet.

17 There's a tendency to kind of group Scientologists
18 together in terms of the reflection that the top manage-
19 ment presented, but the average staff member is nothing
20 more, as far as I'm concerned, than a psychological -- a
21 psychopolitical dupe. The organization is structured in
22 such a manner that everything is done on a neat basis,
23 much like security in the military. So, all those -- and
24 evaluations are done to keep various areas of the Church

1 from operating on their own goals and purposes without
2 really knowing what's going on in another area, although,
3 there is an incredible grapevine that goes through the
4 Church of Scientology.

5 And I had an amusing incident about a week ago
6 where I told a story to someone who was no longer in
7 Scientology at a place in Los Angeles, California, and
8 within a week, the story had gone across country through
9 some Scientologists and back through my wife's -- a friend
10 of my wife's and back to me. And the person that I talked
11 to could no longer get any information about the Church.
12 But it took a week, just person-to-person, to get the
13 story. I won't bother with the story.

14 Getting back to my original point: I'm, basically,
15 here today to try to impress you with the magnitude of
16 the operation that you are facing. And I want you to
17 know in no uncertain terms that there is constant evalua-
18 tion of this hearing going on and all of the things that have
19 happened up to now. And right over here in the Combat
20 Information Center - if that's where they've still got
21 it - evaluations are being done on how to handle you.
22 And I would like to see the tables turned for a change,
23 because I don't think that they're going to be successful.

24 The points that I would like to cover today are,

1 basically: violations of clear cut -- of policy, such
2 as registration and operation of maritime vessels, viola-
3 tions of those rules; transportation of funds in and out
4 of the United States illegally; the violation of Federal
5 Communications Regulations on the use of telex and radio
6 communication equipment; transportation of personnel into
7 and out of the country in violation of immigration laws;
8 conspiracy to impede the IRS; the use of cruel and unusual
9 punishment; and the attempt to defraud the United States
10 Postal Service. And I have personal experience with the
11 Church in all of those areas. Also, the ill treatment of
12 children, parishioners; living conditions -- I've
13 travelled to almost all the organizations around the
14 world, and Clearwater is just another step in the whole
15 game.

16 In accounting, you know, you talk about the normal
17 course of business and business papers, things that are
18 written out and done standardly pretty much on a day-to-
19 day basis, and you don't deviate. Well, the Church has
20 a standard operating basis, and it has an incredible
21 amount of policy that it can show you to tell you that
22 it's not doing anything, but to someone who's really well
23 trained in the policy, they can show you policy that
24 makes it be all right. So, you continuously have a facade

1 being put forth to the public about what's Church policy,
2 but there is corollary -- corresponding policy that would
3 make it all right to violate that policy.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Superseding policy?

5 MR. MAYER: Yes.

6 Well, it happens to be a crime in the Church to
7 impede Scientology. And any staff member, you know, is
8 severely punished in terms of the organization for
9 impeding the progress or the expansion of Scientology.
10 That's called High Crime Policy; the Fair Game Policy
11 is part of that, which is allegedly cancelled, but I have
12 never found a Church official that could show me the
13 policy that cancelled it because it would have to be
14 written by L. Ron Hubbard and, you know, specifically
15 deny that policy, not a little caption printed down at the
16 bottom. I printed those captions; I used to be Deputy
17 Post Chief US in the early seventies. We put them on
18 all the policy letters, which didn't cancel anything,
19 certainly not the way an Ethics Officer would handle a
20 person who's trying to impede the progress of the Church.

21 In terms of the Fair Game Policy itself, of course,
22 I have no way of proving that the Church of Scientology
23 blew up my car. I just have the knowledge within myself
24 that that's where I told them I was and that's where it

1 got blown up. The fact that I didn't live there was to
2 my credit, not theirs.

3 In testifying before the U.S. Tax Court, the day
4 after my address went on the record, I was sued by the
5 Church by my ex-wife, who, I assume, is still in Scien-
6 tology. The transcript hadn't even been published yet
7 and they had my name and address and had a little kid
8 come out and serve me papers. So, I was being sued, and
9 I subsequently moved. I was under IRS protection at the
10 time, anyway; they stayed at the house. So, I moved and
11 I've been moving ever since.

12 They also pulled out my -- what's called a B 1
13 File, during the Scientology hearings. And what it
14 basically is is a list of the things that I have done
15 wrong in the past that came out of my confessional folder.

16 I'm kind of getting a little out of sequence here
17 in terms of what I wanted to talk to you about, but
18 since the point has been brought out, there is a state-
19 ment by the Church that confessional folders are not
20 available to anybody but the auditor or the minister.
21 And I can't tell you the number of folders that I looked
22 at when I was going around in various organizations trying
23 to get the income up, because I had to know what was
24 going on with them in order to get them back on line and

1 get them doing their job.

2 So, they brought out my B 1 File. I didn't even
3 know it was that thick; I was rather flattered. I didn't
4 know they could get that much stuff out of it. And there
5 were a couple of files sitting right next to me with --
6 in the courtroom that had my name on it, and they didn't
7 have anything but my confessional folders and my B 1 File.
8 The B 1 File comes out of the confessional folder. It's
9 a time sequence - day/time sequence - list of all of the
10 things they feel they can use.

11 That's a very good point. This was during the
12 second day of the trial in Los Angeles, California that
13 the files appeared.

14 MR. LeCHER: Which trial is that?

15 MR. MAYER: This is the U.S. Tax Court trial. The
16 approximate time would have been around February of last
17 year; it was about February of last year.

18 I was -- about two days into it -- you have to
19 realize that my function during the trial was -- when a
20 Scientologist would get up on the stand and tell their
21 version of what was going on in the Church, whenever they
22 would either directly lie or when they would present a
23 policy letter that was supposed to tell what kind of --
24 what their policy was on the subject that was being

1 discussed, I would reach over to Mr. Cohen and I would
2 direct him to the policy letter, the definitions that
3 opposed that. So, I was not very popular with the
4 Church's attorney, because we were shooting holes in
5 their stories.

6 For the next couple of days, my folders arrived.
7 And it was just nothing more than the standard attempt
8 to intimidate me and let me know that they were going to
9 try to make public what was in my confessional folders.
10 Well, I would willingly let any one of you read them
11 now, because there isn't anything that anybody's going
12 to do to me anyway. I did what I did; I've been what
13 I've been, and I've either learned from it or I haven't.
14 So, I don't have any secrets that way. But it was an
15 attempt to intimidate --

16 MR. LeCHER: Was that about when your car was blown
17 up?

18 MR. MAYER: No. That was 1978, and I had been
19 moving around.

20 In addition, several Guardian's Office members
21 appeared at friends of mine's houses looking for me
22 during the trial. In fact, the day before I was supposed
23 to appear, I got a telephone call from a Karen Kyper,
24 who had -- was originally out of the Minneapolis

1 Organization and married to Bob Kyper, also a Guardian's
2 Office staff member. She and another girl harassed a
3 friend of mine down at Laguna Beach; they were trying to
4 get in touch with me before I went in and testified.

5 The other areas that I would like to cover with
6 you is how Scientology actually operates against the best
7 interests of the community and, possibly, touch on some
8 things that I think would help you in the incredible job
9 you've got of making ordinances out of all this. So, I'd
10 like to get back to the use of various telex equipment
11 and so on and so forth.

12 During the course of my time in Scientology, as
13 senior executive, I was on call twenty-four hours a day.
14 I could be on course in Los Angeles and be ordered into
15 briefing because a set of Flag Mission Orders had come
16 in, ordering me to Austin, Texas or Boston or Florida
17 or South Africa. And I'd have about fifteen or twenty
18 minutes to get my stuff together and get into briefing.

19 And, incidentally, one of my jobs when I first got
20 into the upper level of the executive structure was
21 briefing couriers on how to get things in and out of the
22 country. I'm -- I probably have a hundred briefing tapes
23 of people, couriers, that I briefed on how to get through
24 the various immigration and customs officials, postal

1 officials, attempts to get things out of the country.

2 I have been personally involved with people who have
3 brought money in and out of the United States.

4 My ex-wife and I smuggled two thousand dollars worth
5 of rand apiece into this -- into Clearwater on our last
6 mission from South Africa in 1976.

7 MR. LeCHER: Two thousand dollars worth of what?

8 MR. MAYER: Rand, krugrand --

9 MR. LeCHER: Oh.

10 MR. MAYER: -- that's the name of the currency
11 there.

12 So, I'm familiar with the fact that it isn't just
13 an accident that some money gets out of the country. It's
14 a regular, established procedure.

15 There's an interesting thing about the procedure,
16 too, because on the -- on the face of it it looks like
17 everyday business activities and students coming in and
18 out and so on and so forth. It's just exactly what it's
19 supposed to look like. A Scientologist, for instance,
20 in Los Angeles who was going to come to Clearwater to get
21 some training would be taken into the briefing room in
22 Los Angeles and briefed on techniques of getting through
23 various government agencies. They would even go so far
24 as to clay demo; they would do clay demonstrations of the

1 ways they were going to do it: what if this happened.
2 And I would grill them on all the possibility -- all the
3 things that I thought that they could run into, until I
4 was certain that they could pass a security check, which
5 is nothing more than a lie detector test. And they could
6 go down and they could say that they understood their
7 mission and they knew how to carry it out, and they had
8 no other reason for going than to carry the mission out.

9 This was routine. They were routinely checked on a
10 lie detector to make sure they actually got what I was
11 trying to tell them and, you know, didn't have any other
12 reasons for doing it. We might send out twelve or fifteen
13 people in a week to Clearwater and to other places
14 earlier where Flag was.

15 I was also at the time -- my cover was called
16 Operations in the United States. I was directly under
17 what was then the Continental Commander for the United
18 States area. I handled external communications, telex
19 transmissions, Church management across the United States
20 on a supervisor level, and data evaluations, organization
21 analysis. I would analyze things that were going on in
22 various churches around the country and devise programs
23 or plans that people could be sent out to raise the
24 income level of the organization.

1 So, I might brief ten or twelve people a week to
2 go out to Flag. And my External Communications Chief
3 would have pre-wrapped, using two sets of wrappers --
4 the first wrapper for whatever was going out would have
5 the liaison office address on it for wherever the package
6 was going to go through before it was mailed -- before
7 it got to Flag, and the second one would be a phony
8 address with a phony corporate name on it.

9 And at one time -- when I first inherited the job,
10 we maintained five different phony companies that things
11 were shipped out of Los Angeles to various parts of the
12 world. And all the packages that I sent had an outer
13 wrapping and then an inner wrapping, so that when the
14 courier successfully got out of the country, the wrapping
15 could be taken off at the liaison office and then
16 forwarded to the next checkpoint.

17 The -- after the couriers were briefed by me, they
18 were sent down to Finance where they would be given
19 packages to courier to Flag. None of the couriers,
20 because of the fact that the packages were pre-wrapped,
21 knew who had the loot or who had what. And they were all
22 instructed to act as though they were just corporate
23 papers, and that was part of the standard, everyday
24 briefing.

1 And people -- well, I was briefed on three missions
2 here in Clearwater, and I took documents out of the
3 country. I was sent out as a tourist to South Africa
4 and England and Scotland from Clearwater and came back
5 here and debriefed and then went out again.

6 I have to say that in all kindness that when I --
7 I stumbled across a little of an invoicing fixing project
8 when I was at Flag. I was the ship's manager of the
9 Apollo before it came into Florida. The Church was doing
10 a little invoice changing project right underneath our
11 office on the ship. And I got -- my wife and I got sent
12 out on a mission because I didn't want to be here when
13 the IRS got into -- when they got into Clearwater. So,
14 I was probably not quite the perfect Scientologist in
15 that respect. But I just couldn't see how they could
16 get away with it. As it turns out, they're not.

17 MR. FLYNN: I'd just like to make a legal point to
18 the Commission here. His background -- the relevance
19 or importance of all his testimony is that the allegations
20 in the report and the considerations of the Commission
21 are that the goals and purposes and representations,
22 policies of the Church are misrepresented to people here
23 in Clearwater as to what they're paying for, what the
24 nature of the organization is. And that these policies

1 with regard to what the nature of the organization is
2 are uniform. And, therefore, important for your consider-
3 ation is whether there are uniform policies that have been
4 practiced for many years right up to the present time
5 here in Clearwater, which are in direct contradiction to
6 those represented policies as to the nature of the organ-
7 ization for which people are paying millions of dollars
8 for here in Clearwater.

9 So, from a legal point of view, all of this testi-
10 mony is extremely important.

11 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Calderbank has a quick question.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah, I've got a legal point, Mr.
13 Flynn.

14 One of the newspaper reporters that's reporting on
15 this legislative hearing continually refers to allega-
16 tions of fact, your allegations, as these witnesses come
17 up. For the benefit of the public and the viewing pub-
18 lic, especially, at home, I'd like to have that, if it
19 need be, corrected.

20 Is this testimony and are these documents coming in
21 before this City Commission -- are they as the paper
22 says? And are they your allegations or -- what are they?
23 What do we consider them?

24 MR. FLYNN: Well, first of all, I haven't been

1 sworn under oath, yet; I'm not the one testifying. So,
2 obviously, they're not mine.

3 Secondly, perhaps, whoever you're quoting should
4 go to law school to realize the significance of what's
5 being done.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: So, this -- it is evidence?

7 MR. FLYNN: When the final report is prepared and
8 the items of evidence that have been introduced so far
9 and will be introduced the rest of the afternoon are
10 presented to the Commission, together with the proposals
11 for the ordinances, the significance of it will become
12 quite plain.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: So, they're not allegations,
14 they're evidence?

15 MR. FLYNN: That's correct.

16 MR. LeCHER: That's a good point, Mr. Calderbank.
17 Many people have read those allegations, and I'm glad it's
18 cleared up and now understood.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Thank you.

20 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Mayer.

21 MR. MAYER: I'd like to say something about what
22 just transpired here.

23 I have not heard any of the testimony that's gone
24 on before me, except a couple of minutes of the last

1 person, as it was closing.

2 I am not here to make any legal allegations in
3 terms of the trial or anything like that. I am here to
4 state to you in no uncertain terms that there is only one
5 Church of Scientology; there's only ever been one Church
6 of Scientology. Its entire management operation has been
7 run from Ron Hubbard to Mary Sue Hubbard to the Guardian's
8 Office to the Sea Organization, which is the arm of the
9 Church that carries out on the administrative policy
10 demands. It has always been that way. There has never
11 been a board of directors that has ever operated autonomously
12 within the Church in any organization that I have
13 ever been in, and I've been in almost all of them.

14 One of the -- one of the persons that -- I did a
15 mission -- for instance, Dennis Goggly, in Saint Hill,
16 England, is allegedly one of the officers of the Church
17 of Scientology. I did a mission with him; he was nothing
18 but a clerk. We did a mission to Scotland to handle a
19 guy that was messing up an organization there. And we
20 used his confessional file and his B 1 file and knowledge
21 of Communist activities on his part and involvement that
22 he had had with a stolen goods ring to run him out of the
23 area and stop interfering with the Church operations.

24 Mr. Goggly had never, ever been in a position -- he

1 was kind of a laughable kind of a guy, as a matter of
2 fact. There was no way that he was intellectually
3 capable of being an officer of a worldwide organization,
4 let alone the mother Church in England.

5 MRS. GARVEY: Would you just -- would you have him
6 define "mission," what he is talking about?

7 MR. MAYER: A mission -- a mission is a specific
8 set of objectives. If I say I went on a mission, that
9 means that there was a specific area that needed to be
10 handled within one of the churches, and a step-by-step
11 sequence of actions for rectifying that situation was
12 laid out. And I was very thoroughly briefed on what to
13 do and how to do it.

14 I could walk into the organization and remove the
15 executive director, whether he was the president of the
16 church in that state or not. I could walk in and show
17 him my Mission's Orders and say, "You're on your way to
18 Flag. Be ready in a half hour." And there wouldn't be
19 anybody that would give me any flap about it.

20 Maybe I'm being strong in my language about it,
21 but I'm trying to get across to you that a Sea Org.
22 member on a Flag Mission Order or an L. Ron Hubbard
23 Personal Mission - which I have been on - has unlimited
24 Ethics power in the organization, unlimited ability to

1 walk in and remove the directors and send them packing
2 to appear before what the Church calls a Committee of
3 Evidence and have their confessional folders brought out,
4 gone through, and charges made, and have them go to
5 Committee on it. Nothing to it. That was just standard,
6 everyday stuff.

7 Any -- the Church is very fond of telling you that
8 nobody has access to those confessional folders. It's
9 just not true. Any missionary can order them. I used to
10 order them brought into me so that I could see which
11 people I wanted to take the time -- because it's a very
12 lengthy process to do a lie detector test, especially,
13 to the degree that the Church does: to get into their
14 personal history, their personal -- it's just -- it's
15 looking for crimes against the Church is what it's look-
16 ing for.

17 See, it's against policy to overtly impede the
18 progress of the Church. In fact, it's a crime not to
19 practice Scientology; you impede the Church by not prac-
20 ticing it. So, it's very standard procedure to find out
21 who's been doing what, bring them into the office, and
22 let them know that you know what they've been doing,
23 what's been going on.

24 One of the techniques that's also used is to go:

1 "Listen, we know where there were some errors in your
2 auditing. We know where there are some case problems
3 here. Don't worry about it. As long as you produce,
4 as long as your production is up" -- if a person was a
5 registrar, their sales were up for the week -- "as long
6 as you're doing that, don't worry. You'll get your
7 auditing and we'll make everything all right for you."

8 So, I just want to really get that point across to
9 you that there is no separation in the -- of the various
10 churches.

11 If I -- in fact, before I left, I used to go into
12 the data files, while being briefed for a mission, and I
13 could pull out -- the Church is very fond of saying
14 there's no connecting financial reports, yet, I could walk
15 into the files and get a complete financial report on any
16 organization around the world. Of course, we stuck pretty
17 much to what we were doing for that particular mission,
18 what we were supposed to do there. But it's just simply
19 not true that there are no AC 2 forms, which are the
20 Church's -- a breakdown of the gross income that comes
21 into the Church are standardly sent every Thursday night
22 to what's called Data Files so that, over that weekend,
23 evaluations can be done by the Commodore's Staff. And
24 if the income had dropped sufficiently in an area, a

1 couple of people like myself would be gotten together and
2 sent out as a team to straighten the area out and get the
3 income up again.

4 MR. FLYNN: One more legal point: The significance
5 of the record-keeping process of the Church of Scien-
6 tology, of which the witness has just testified, one -
7 one little part of - is extremely significant, and he
8 could testify for weeks on that subject alone.

9 It's very significant for this Commission because,
10 if the Church of Scientology does produce any witnesses,
11 you may rest assured that any subject matters that the
12 Commission wishes to question them on -- there have been
13 extensive records kept on any of those subjects, as this
14 witness is testifying now, pursuant to corporate policy,
15 for many years.

16 So, if there were records pertaining to any educa-
17 tional processing that's been going on at the Fort Harri-
18 son, clinics, patients being taken care of, people being
19 taken care of, what they were treated for, children that
20 were in the nursery, what type of education they've
21 received, what type of grades they received, Guardian's
22 Office operations, any of hundreds of varieties of
23 issues, you can rest assured, as the witness will testify,
24 that there has been an extensive record keeping about

1 that issue. And so, if a witness is brought onto the
2 witness stand, he could be questioned in detail as to,
3 for instance, if there was a school at the Fort Harrison,
4 where the school was, what dates the school was run, who
5 attended the school, and what records there are pertaining
6 to all of those items.

7 MR. MAYER: I think I can give you a real good
8 example of how confessional folders are normally used.
9 I was fired on a mission from Clearwater into Saint Hill,
10 England. Flag had arrived at that point in time -- and
11 this ties in with the misuse of telex to mislead govern-
12 ment officials, too, because all of our missions were
13 operated by Mr. Hubbard's son-in-law, who was sitting
14 over here - or was sitting over here - at the Fort
15 Harrison, by telex. There was daily telex transmission
16 from wherever we were in the world into Clearwater into
17 what was called the Action Bureau, where missions would
18 be evaluated on a daily basis.

19 As I said earlier, there were some problems in an
20 organization in Scotland and in Manchester. I was for a
21 short time on loan to the Guardian's Office Intelligence
22 Bureau in Saint Hill, England. I was shown a B 1 file,
23 an intelligence file, that came from the preclear folder
24 or the confessional folders, of the person we were going

1 to deal with, which dealt with sexual misconduct, orgies,
2 and so and so forth about -- of an executive director in
3 the Manchester Organization. His wife had already come --
4 had split from him and had come down to Saint Hill to
5 more or less turn herself in and get back into the good
6 graces, and she had supplied a lot of information.

7 We walked into the organization, and I sat the man
8 down and told him what we knew and told him he was on his
9 way to Saint Hill and that if he ever got back in the good
10 graces of the Church, he could probably have his organiza-
11 back. The man was a medical doctor, who was also the
12 executive director of one of the organizations.

13 But I knew of at least a half a dozen people who
14 knew about the information that was in his confessional
15 folder. And it was used to remove him as the executive
16 director and get him back down to the Saint Hill Org.
17 for quote, unquote handling.

18 Those operations were monitored via telex from the
19 United States, from your city. Right here.

20 There has never been a command line anywhere in
21 Scientology that did not go through, either, the Guardian's
22 Office or the Commodore's Staff to Ron and to Mary Sue.
23 Wherever they have been, their aides have passed down
24 their orders to the rest of the organization. When it

1 moved here to Clearwater, it was no exception; the whole
2 operation was here.

3 There were just literally thousands and thousands
4 of files. There was a room bigger than this one filled
5 with file cabinets with -- that they pulled off of the
6 ship that contained the data of all of the missions that
7 had been sent out from Flag. All that information was
8 available right here in your city. I read it; I used it
9 and did my job. I couldn't have done my job without it.
10 I had to know what was going on in the organizations in
11 order to be able to handle the people we were having
12 trouble with.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Those files were here in --

14 MR. MAYER: Here.

15 MR. BERFIELD: In Clearwater?

16 MR. MAYER: In the bank building right over here.
17 That's where I was briefed.

18 I would like to make --

19 MR. FLYNN: The potential legal ramifications of
20 much of this witness' testimony, as was Mr. Walters'
21 testimony, although not known at the time, are broad
22 ranging, and at a later point in time they'll be made plain.
23 All of this testimony is extremely important with regard
24 to those ordinances.

1 MR. MAYER: I have a photostatic copy of the
2 original -- and by the way, the data that I'm going to
3 talk to you about is available to the counselor, so if
4 you need copies of it, you're more than welcome to it.

5 I may have to translate this somewhat for you,
6 but -- because of the terminology; however, the termin-
7 ology -- you can look it up in your own version of the
8 Scientology dictionary, when you get the telex later on.

9 But this telex was sent to the LRH's -- L. Ron
10 Hubbard's personal secretary in the United States by
11 L. Ron Hubbard's personal secretary on Flag, which was
12 then located in the Netherlands Antilles. This was in,
13 I believe, 1974 or '75. The name of the person was Ken
14 Erkhardt; he's well known as the LRH personal secretary.

15 With translations, it reads: "To the LRH personal
16 secretary OB regarding the ship." At this time I had
17 just inherited the flotilla of ships in the -- on the
18 west coast, and I became the fleet captain. I'm qualified
19 to run any tonnage in any ocean in any weather. So, I
20 was a qualified skipper. And I had just taken it over.
21 But the ships were in very poor shape. They were run by
22 an unqualified personnel who didn't know what they were
23 doing, didn't know how to maintain them, and they were
24 placing the Church at risk, basically.

1 I had taken aircraft carriers through renovations
2 while I was in the service. And I took the Apollo through
3 one, so I knew what I was doing. And I was appointed as
4 the captain. However, there were -- the ship was sitting
5 alongside the dock. You have to realize this ship cost --
6 it was one hundred eighty-five feet long and it had a
7 couple hundred crew members on it, and it was costing the
8 Church five thousand dollars a week to sit there. That
9 was our budget per week, five thousand dollars.

10 The Church wanted it out, cruising up and down the
11 coast, doing recruiting, doing events, public events, where
12 we could introduce people to Scientology and then usher
13 them into the local organizations where the registrar
14 would be signed up for courses.

15 The telex reads: "Leave the threat of the Rehabili-
16 tation Project Forces hanging over them for now." And
17 this was with regard to the staff, the ship's officers
18 that I inherited when I took on the post: the Public
19 Officer, the Finance Officer, the Chief Officer. These
20 are people who had not, quote, unquote, made it so far;
21 it was costing a lot of money.

22 It says: "Leave the threat of the Rehabilitation
23 Project Forces hanging over them for now. Have their
24 confessional folders gone through, listing all crimes

1 found. Crimes must be verified and not auditor errors,
2 and the criminals with the greatest treasonous actions
3 put on the Rehabilitation Project Forces. The remainder
4 are told that they have one more chance to come clean and
5 go straight. Have their folders summarized and pro-
6 grammed for vital corrections and then a security check-
7 ing. If there are no more changes, they go to the Rehabi-
8 litation Project Forces.

9 "Regardless of any auditing or security checking,
10 those not going to the RPF are to get on the ball and pull
11 their weight and complete the ship's programs by the
12 deadline already given. There's going to be no Captain
13 Bill to reward you. They make it or they don't. And if
14 they haven't woken up to that, wake them up.

15 "Love, Erk." Ken Erkhardt.

16 Like the line in their own telex form, they ordered
17 people to go into confessional folders. They make it
18 obvious.

19 MR. FLYNN: For the record, we will be presenting
20 numerous, actual telex operations and operations with
21 confessional folders on the overhead projector at the
22 appropriate time.

23 Again, the significance of that issue -- where,
24 probably, per year, thousands, perhaps, tens of thousands -

1 numbers unknown by this Commission at this point - are
2 coming to your city and paying millions of dollars,
3 believing that all of that information that is being given
4 to this organization is highly confidential is of obvious
5 legal significance.

6 MR. MAYER: The next point that I'd like to talk
7 about in relation to what was just gone over is the
8 Church's free use of telex lines and confessional folders
9 and breaking and entry in order to gain an advantage in
10 the community.

11 In 1971, when I was running operations for the
12 Church, I was involved with a man whose name I don't care
13 to give now -- unless it's all right with you.

14 Okay. His name was Bill Foster. One of the people
15 that he worked with on that operation is here today, so
16 he could be called up to corroborate what I'm going to
17 say to you.

18 I received a call from Bill Foster, while in New
19 York. I had been sent from the Apollo, which was operating
20 in the Antilles at the time, to New York with my wife to
21 operate the eastern seaboard for the Church on a manage-
22 ment mission.

23 Mr. Foster had allegedly been expelled a couple of
24 years earlier for misconduct or something in Boston.

1 I received a call from Bill Foster, and he came
2 into the org. -- we had been very close friends. And he
3 came in with an incredible story. He said that he had,
4 in actual fact, been operating the Guardian's Office out
5 of Boston and Washington and involved in a break -- break-
6 ing and entering team. His cover had been blown because
7 one of the operatives had been compromised - at the time
8 I didn't know who that was - and the Church was going to
9 leave him high and dry. In other words, they were not
10 going to acknowledge the fact that he had been working
11 for them. They were upholding the story that he had been
12 expelled and was doing it on his own.

13 He came to me because, at that time, I was the senior
14 executive authority on the eastern seaboard for the
15 Church and in direct contact with Flag management. My
16 mission was being run by telex on a daily basis. When
17 he asked me if I could assist him, I called the person
18 who was then in charge of the Guardian's Office in
19 Boston - this is Bob Raimor, who had also been a friend
20 of mine, I had worked with him on a mission some years
21 earlier in Boston - and I said: "Look it, Foster's here,
22 this is what he told me. Is it true? Has he been working
23 for you in the field?" And he said, "Yeah. Yeah, he
24 has."

1 And I said, "Well, just on the basis of misuse of
2 policy in handling the man, I thought that I could help
3 him out with Flag management." And I started to get a
4 lot of heat down by telex lines about him and what he had
5 done and so on and so forth. So, I got him out of the
6 country; I sent him to a mission in Canada, where, up to
7 a few months ago, he was still residing, not being willing
8 to come back to the United States, I suppose, until the
9 statute of limitations runs out on his activities.

10 MR. FLYNN: Some more detailed evidence pertaining
11 to that particular subject will also be introduced at a
12 later time. The legal significance of that testimony may
13 relate to the disowning of the policies of the corpora-
14 tion to disown information or responsibility for the
15 actions of its operatives, such as Mary Sue Hubbard and
16 the other top ten people who have just been convicted.

17 And the significance for this city is the fact that
18 the corporation is now disowning responsibility of those
19 people for any of the things that took place here in
20 Clearwater or around the world. And that disowning of
21 responsibility process began last summer and is taking
22 place right up to the present time. The inferences that
23 could be drawn from the testimony of this witness regard
24 ing that policy to disown are becoming apparent on their

1 face.

2 MR. MAYER: To elaborate on that even further, I'm.
3 not here to complain about what the Church has done to
4 me. Understand that. I'm here to really impress upon
5 you what you're actually dealing with, the magnitude of
6 what you're dealing with.

7 In 1971, we had -- and, of course, this ties into
8 the treatment of children, too, actually, because, in
9 1971, we had a base in Mexico, and it had been put there
10 as a training camp for Sea Org. members, missionaries,
11 and a place to put what was called the Cadet Org., the
12 children's org. Children were routinely transported
13 from Los Angeles to the Mexican base and berthed and
14 housed there under the care of various base personnel
15 so that their mothers and fathers could get on with
16 their business within the Church. A lot of them had
17 staff positions and senior executive positions in the
18 Church in Los Angeles.

19 We were having a great deal of problems at that
20 time with the city officials. I don't know what the laws
21 are here in Florida, but in Los Angeles, 1.1 person in a
22 one-bedroom apartment, excluding kitchens and bathrooms,
23 is considered overcrowded, anything over that. Of course,
24 the Church doesn't normally have bathrooms and kitchens

1 in this little room, so quite frequently - in fact,
2 almost all the time - those rooms are incredibly over-
3 crowded. So that it was a place to get kids out of the
4 country and out of the way of production.

5 Mexico, of course, is -- had at that time -- ten
6 years ago is still pretty long -- in fact, there were
7 bandit groups roaming the hills. And they used to come
8 down to the base. The base fell under my sphere of
9 responsibility as an operating project; I was in charge
10 of operations. Bandits were coming in at night and they
11 were stealing grain and they were stealing saddles and
12 whatever wasn't tied down, whatever they could get away
13 with, and they were causing a lot of commotion.

14 And I was asked to go down with another ex-member
15 of the Church, whose name I don't care to give you
16 because he's still around -- we were asked to go down
17 there and eliminate that. That person and myself have
18 had extensive intelligence and, I think, counterintelli-
19 gence activities in the armed forces. The person at that
20 time had free access -- in fact, was dealing in arms at
21 the time and was routinely used by the Church on various
22 Guardian operations.

23 We were asked to go down and did go -- actually,
24 went into briefing to go down and set up a little infra-

1 red sniper scope in the middle of the night and make sure
2 the bandits didn't bother us anymore. Fortunately, for
3 me, the lady -- one of the ladies who was managing the
4 children's org. at the time shot one of the bandits -
5 I believe it was the leader - through the front door when
6 they were trying to break in and they dispersed and the
7 mission was subsequently called off.

8 I just want to get across to you that, at that point
9 in time with the Church, that sort of thing -- that they
10 were impeding Scientology. They were nothing but bandits
11 and had to be gotten out of the way. And that was the
12 way it went.

13 I don't know what else to tell you about it. You
14 can ask questions about it if you'd like. All I can say
15 is at the time I was willing to go. I don't necessarily
16 feel good about that now, but at the time I didn't think
17 of it.

18 I think, since I've already mentioned children --
19 I have, in addition -- I could say without any reserva-
20 tion that the food, the supervision of children, the
21 education of children, in every organization that I have
22 ever been in in the Church, has been terrible.

23 I got into an incredible fire fight with a person named
24 Fran Broker, who was in charge at that time of financing

1 the various operations in --

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Mayer --

3 MR. MAYER: -- Los Angeles.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- what do you mean by "fire fight"?

5 MR. MAYER: Well, I was trying to get money for
6 the base and she had the power of the pen, all right?
7 And I had to convince -- I had to make a plea for monies
8 to adequately feed and house the children. And the prob-
9 lem that I had -- it's a kind of a funny story in a way,
10 but at the time for me it was really serious.

11 The caretaker used to come up from Mexico on a
12 weekly basis to get money to bring back down for day-to-
13 day purchasing in Mexico because of the price difference.
14 The area was incredibly infested with scorpions, snakes,
15 tarantulas, spiders. The area around the base house was
16 had a lot of shrubbery up against the house, and the
17 place had never really been put -- you know, made habita-
18 ble.

19 The man brought me up a jar full of scorpions,
20 tarantulas, and later he said, "Look it, we've got to
21 have money to clear this brush out, so these kids -- if
22 one of these kids gets bit, you know, you and I are the
23 ones that are going to be in trouble because we're
24 responsible for the area. The rest of the Church is going

1 take the rap of getting us killed down here."

2 So, I brought -- I took the car and I brought it
3 into the woman and I plopped it down on her desk, and I
4 said, "Here they are. What I've told you is true, and
5 I'm laying it on you. I'm not going to be responsible
6 anymore for the care of those children if you are going
7 to deny me the funds to get the tools necessary to clean
8 around the house and to take all the brush and stuff away
9 and make it safe for them." And I eventually got the money, by the
10 way, but I was no longer in -- and it was a little hard
11 for me.

12 That persisted wherever I went. Staff members were
13 always ill-fed, ill-clothed. I had a personal situation
14 where I had an abcess in my tooth and I was being audited
15 for it. I'm ready to go to the dentist, and I was being
16 audited for it. And I spent about a week, week and-a-
17 half, doing various auditing assists - what they call
18 touch assists - to get rid of the pain and get me out of
19 it. And, finally, it just -- I was just delirious and --
20 well, there wasn't any money for the medical is what it
21 boiled down to. They didn't have the money to take me to
22 the dentist, so they were trying to handle it with Scien-
23 tology.

24 I went to the dentist, and this was in San Pedro -

1 although, I don't recall the name of the dentist, the
2 records are certainly still available if it came to
3 that - he told me I had just made it. It was abcessing
4 and it was, you know, up into my gums and stuff, and if
5 it had been another day or so, I wouldn't be here to talk
6 to you.

7 You wanted to know about conditions here in Florida
8 in your own city. When I first came back from -- well,
9 my last mission to South Africa, when I came back, I was
10 very, very disgruntled with the Church's operations. I
11 refused to take posting because it just was not within my
12 sense of ethics. So, I went back to what was my original
13 job, which was management.

14 And the person that I had trained to replace me,
15 when I went off on mission, was now the manager for the
16 Fort Harrison. His name will probably come back to me:
17 Nick something. Anyway, he had -- I had been his senior,
18 and I came back and I said, "Look, I'm fighting this
19 posting. Until it's handled, I don't want to do anything
20 except do what the policy says, which is I have a right to
21 my old job back when I come off of a mission. But I don't
22 want to take your job, so just put me to work and, if
23 you're willing to fight for me as a staff member, well,
24 I'm not going anywhere."

1 So, for several weeks before I managed to get out
2 of Clearwater and go back to Los Angeles on a leave of
3 absence, I set up bunk beds in the Fort Harrison Hotel
4 up to the ceiling and just packed them in like rats.

5 MR. HATCHETT: You mean, people.

6 MR. MAYER: People.

7 There were rooms that were -- that were smaller
8 than the division of this area here that had bunks in
9 them five high and clothes strewn all over, sea bags full
10 of clothes just -- in fact, my wife and I were stuck in a
11 room that was already occupied by somebody because they
12 were out on another assignment for a couple of days, and
13 we had to -- we had to coexist with all of their things
14 in the room in crowded conditions. We didn't even have a
15 place to hang our clothes.

16 And this is routine. I'm not talking about some-
17 thing that happens once in a while.

18 When I was in charge of operations in Los Angeles,
19 I used to drill the staff members -- we very often had
20 people that were sympathetic to the Church that would
21 apprise us of inspections that were going to take place.
22 And when we'd get a forewarning of it, we had drills set
23 up to pull the bunk beds out, move the dressers out, ship
24 them over to one of the other houses until the inspection

1 was over, and then bring them back and pack them back in
2 again.

3 MR. BERFIELD: That was here in Clearwater?

4 MR. MAYER: No. I didn't do the drilling here in
5 Clearwater. But that is part of one of the regular drill
6 that the Sea Organization has on what is called station -
7 it's naval terminology. They have drills on repelling
8 enemy mortars. Sea Org. members are routinely trained
9 on how to do this.

10 So, if, for instance, security here in the Fort
11 Harrison was apprised that there was going to be an
12 inspection, there'd be more Guardian's Office personnel
13 running round than you could think of making sure that
14 everybody got all the evidence out of sight. It would be
15 swept clean before anybody got there. And then, a couple
16 of Guardian's Office staff members would be on the
17 inspection to feed them false data, maybe give them
18 reports of their own about the conditions, and just
19 generally distract them from carrying out their duties.

20 And this is not something that happens just once
21 in a while. It's a drilled thing; it's a training pro-
22 cess. It's a common, everyday, garden variety training
23 drill.

24 I think -- I'm open right now for anything you want

1 to ask about it. I do have some other things, but I
2 think it would probably be --

3 MR. LeCHER: All right. I'll start out with a few
4 questions and then turn it over to my colleagues.

5 I think you're probably the best one to answer this
6 question that I've asked about two others: Why Clear-
7 water? And why the United Churches of Florida, and why
8 not Tampa, Brooksville, or Miami? And why not Scien-
9 tology? The climate's not right?

10 MR. MAYER: Yes, in more than one sense of the word.
11 And you're talking about -- when you're talking about
12 setting up a base where L. Ron Hubbard might actually
13 come, you're talking about an area that is very, very
14 heavily evaluated in every sense of the word. Who's in
15 local offices? What have they done?

16 And I want you to know that every single person
17 on the City Council was very, very thoroughly -- their
18 background was very, very thoroughly checked to see if
19 there was any stuff in the woodwork that could be used
20 against you.

21 I happen to know the man that purchased the Church
22 grounds here in Clearwater at the time. His name was
23 Ron Strauss. He was a musician on Flag in the band when
24 he was selected for the mission and said he would do it.

1 These evaluations, of course, were done -- they're
2 all done in advance. All this stuff was done in advance.

3 I was personally sent out on a mission with a man
4 by the name of Commander Bob Young, by Ron Hubbard, to
5 find a base for the Apollo. It was only a rumor, but it
6 was pretty solid to everybody that was on the ship at
7 the time, that Mary Sue had had enough of running around
8 on Ron's rusty old yachts and wanted a nice place where,
9 you know, she could have herself a little chicken farm or
10 something. It didn't, of course, work out that way.

11 I ran all over the Caribbean with another man look-
12 ing for locations. We went into the places on a cover
13 story. The cover story was, basically, that Operation
14 Transport Corporation, which is now and never has been
15 anything else but the Church of Scientology, was going to
16 set up a training center where they could do their busi-
17 ness management consulting out of.

18 There was another operation going on at the time
19 called Universal Media Organization, which was a promo-
20 tional organization: television shows, slide shows. We
21 did some work for one of the government officials on
22 Aruba, I believe it was; we did a project for them. This
23 was all laying a cover so that, when the Church came in,
24 all the questions that could be asked and all the

1 investigations that could be done to discourage them from
2 coming in had been done on an organization that really
3 didn't exist anyway, except as a facade to waste your
4 time on. By the time you'd finished running around try-
5 ing to sort all of that stuff, then, we were already
6 here, if I remember correctly.

7 MR. LeCHER: Well, I remember the story in 1975,
8 when you arrived, and I first was in office -- but the
9 story I had was that you bought the Fort Harrison for a
10 religious retreat for retired ministers.

11 MR. MAYER: Yes. Well, the actual fact of the
12 matter is what we were trying to do at that time -- Bob
13 Young and myself, Bill Azzeroni - I don't know where he
14 is now - we were the ones that -- and Ron's personal
15 secretary or assistant at the time; her name was Liz
16 Osley. We conceived the idea of the media organization
17 in order to get Ron back out into the public. We all
18 felt at this time that he get out in the public.

19 The idea was -- and I used to read the scripts.
20 We'd write the scripts for what was going to go on and
21 we were shooting scenes that were going to go on, and they
22 would go through this to Ron and/or Mary Sue and be
23 approved, the actions. And the idea was to get Ron out
24 here in the community as a religious leader. In fact, I

1 believe he did a couple of radio shows with some local
2 Baptist ministers when he first came in here. And the
3 whole idea was, of course, to use the opinion leader
4 policy of the Church, which is to get a trained Scien-
5 tologist alongside of someone -- not necessarily the
6 governmental head of an agent, but who he listens to.

7 Who do you go to when you have -- when you need
8 advice, as a counsel? You have people that you -- you
9 respect their advice.

10 Well, it's a little too obvious to put a trained
11 Scientologist in the mayor's office. Well, if you can
12 find somebody that the mayor talks to and get a trained
13 Scientologist next to him, boy, you're in good shape.
14 You can just feed anything you want to him along that
15 line. And I assure you that's done every day.

16 I personally brought sixty people up to the
17 governor's campaign in, I think it was, 1974. I was
18 asked by the Guardian's Office to provide Rehabilitation
19 Project Force personnel to back one of the gubernatorial
20 candidates in California. He lost, by the way, but,
21 nonetheless, I had them up there, and I got a commenda-
22 tion for it - I still have it, by the way - for my actions
23 in bringing Scientology into more good favor in the Sta
24 of California.

1 And they stuffed flyers and they handed out flyers
2 and brought people in to be talked to. These were the
3 criminals of Scientology.

4 MR. LeCHER: Why Clearwater? Why not Tampa? Why --
5 was Clearwater the right size, under a hundred thousand
6 people? Was Tampa too big or was, say, Brooksville too
7 small or --

8 MR. MAYER: Politics.

9 The reason -- we found some beautiful locations
10 for the base in the Netherlands Antilles and ran smack
11 into a man who was in the Guardian's Office at the time -
12 I don't know if he still is. His name was Brian Rubenick.
13 And Brian was always a little paranoid. But he was a
14 Guardian's Office personnel, and he was very, very afraid
15 of the political situation in the Caribbean. At the time,
16 as I recall, they were storing a lot of oil over there
17 while we were having a warm winter and didn't need it
18 here. So, there was a lot of political things going on
19 in that area to make sure that nobody knew that there was
20 more oil and gas around than anybody could possibly have
21 dreamed of.

22 So, the political situation in every area was looked
23 at very, very closely and evaluated.

24 You had a situation here at that time, as I recall,

1 tourist business wasn't doing all that good, there was
2 plenty of property available at a good price, a lot of
3 people wanted to get some money back from the investments
4 that they had made; Clearwater wasn't booming at the
5 time.

6 I believe they did find some things to attack the
7 mayor's office with at the time, although, I was running
8 in and out of Clearwater at the time, so, I -- I, you
9 know, I wasn't directly involved, except for people
10 would tell me things in confidence because they knew
11 that I wouldn't squeal on them if they told me something
12 that they couldn't cope with.

13 Understand that a lot of the things that I heard,
14 I heard from close, personal friends who would have been
15 in an awful lot of trouble had anybody known that they
16 had disclosed what they were doing to me. In terms of
17 the rules of evidence, I think you realize what that
18 means. It's not hearsay.

19 MR. LeCHER: So, you investigated the personalities
20 and the temperaments of the local officials, either
21 appointed or elected, correct?

22 MR. MAYER: No.

23 Understand, a set of mission orders of the magni-
24 tude -- in fact, it was an LRH Executive Directive 500

1 series. I don't remember the last couple of numbers on
2 it. But this was probably a fifteen- or twenty-page
3 set of step-by-step things that had to be done before
4 the Guardian's Office would approve the move, all right?

5 So, you didn't have the Church just willy-nilly
6 walk in here and set down. All of these things were
7 very carefully evaluated long before they went into
8 Daytona and started to get into trouble there.

9 As far as I'm concerned, from what I've been able
10 to piece together from the people that I knew that were
11 involved in it, this was just a politically -- a nice place.

12 MR. LeCHER: A nice town.

13 Before we get on to other questions: You said that
14 we are having a hearing against the Church of Scien-
15 tology, and they are back in the office trying to figure
16 out how to handle us.

17 How do you think they may handle us? What should
18 I be aware of? What should my colleagues up on this --

19 MR. MAYER: Well, I'll tell you, I sure wouldn't
20 want to have any skeletons in my closet; I'll be very
21 frank with you.

22 MR. LeCHER: Now, you tell me.

23 MR. BERFIELD: Mayor, may I ask one question?

24 MR. MAYER: I -- they're not of any value once

1 they're -- once they've been used.

2 MR. BERFIELD: If you got a phone call in the
3 morning and the phone call consisted of: "I heard you
4 talking with a gentleman before. I know you have two
5 daughters and they go to such and such a school," would
6 you consider that a threat, if the facts in the case
7 were the truth?

8 MR. MAYER: In my case, it certainly would be.
9 It's --

10 MR. BERFIELD: If that phone call came to me, would
11 you take that phone call seriously?

12 MR. MAYER: Oh, sure. In fact, if -- it would
13 already have gone past the point where you should have
14 been doing something about it.

15 MR. BERFIELD: You mean, if you were me --

16 MR. MAYER: It's hard to --

17 MR. BERFIELD: If you were me, you would not be
18 sitting here, you would be with your family?

19 MR. MAYER: You have been classified as an active
20 enemy of the Church. There are passive and active
21 enemies, and this is part of their GO intelligence train-
22 ing. And I've done their Intelligence PR course. I've
23 been trained how to handle you guys if I wanted to -- i.
24 you were attacking me. In other words, I've been trained

1 to present the Church's position in a favorable manner.
2 I've been trained to take everything that you say and
3 turn it around against you, if that's what I needed to
4 do.

5 In your particular case, they would have already
6 classified you as an active enemy. You would have done
7 something that impeded the expansion or the progress of
8 Scientology, and you would have gone from somebody who was
9 just in disagreement with the Church or was interested in
10 finding out what it was all about into somebody who was
11 doing something about it.

12 The minute you became active, then, you go under
13 the area of observance of GO Intelligence. That's when
14 they start gathering the data, when you become active.

15 I didn't get sued until I testified. As long as I
16 hid for three years after I got out - and the IRS didn't
17 know where I was and nobody else - nobody bothered me.
18 But the IRS found me, and I agreed to work with them. And
19 as soon as I did, the day after I put my testimony on the
20 record - it hadn't even been released yet --

21 MR. LeCHER: Well, Mr. Berfield is obviously --

22 MR. MAYER: -- they were right on my doorstep.

23 MR. LeCHER: -- concerned about the threats he has
24 had. I have -- well, unfortunately, I no longer live

1 with my family, but I'm concerned about that, too. That's
2 why I'm asking you, as a person who has done these
3 things, what -- how they handle -- how may we expect to
4 be handled?

5 MR. MAYER: Well, a friend of mine's daughter a
6 week ago turned her in to the Church of Scientology for
7 dealing with me and a bunch of other Scientologists who
8 had gotten together outside of the, you know, the author-
9 ity of the Church to discuss the things with me that they
10 didn't like that were going on in the Church. Her
11 daughter is a Sea Org. member and went straight into
12 the Church and turned her in for the activities, and
13 they pulled her in and grilled her.

14 In fact, she has a lot of money still with the
15 Church, so they sent a couple of registrars along to
16 try to get her to go back in here to Clearwater and get
17 her, quote, unquote, case handled so that she would be
18 no longer in disagreement with the Church.

19 That's a standard qualifications action of the
20 Qual Division. Anybody that becomes disaffected with
21 the Church, their confessional folders are immediately
22 gone through in an attempt to get them back in session,
23 being audited to come back on line.

24 MR. LeCHER: A standard procedure, then, would be

1 to, in order to stop these hearings -- would have been
2 to find skeletons in the closets of the five Commissioners
3 and, possibly, the attorney behind it.

4 Would that be the normal way of --

5 MR. MAYER: That --

6 MR. LeCHER: -- having some point of influence to
7 stop these hearings before they started?

8 MR. MAYER: If you want to know what the Church of
9 Scientology will do to you, read The Art of War by Lao
10 Tzu, because that's one of the required books on the
11 training manual for an intelligence operative.

12 MR. FLYNN: The whole -- part of all the intelli-
13 gence operations, drills and policies, as I mentioned at
14 the beginning and a number of times, will all be put into
15 evidence. Some already have, but there are hundreds more
16 to put into evidence.

17 MR. LeCHER: Well, I've alerted my family just to
18 watch themselves and Mr. Berfield has alerted his family,
19 and I'm sure the other Commissioners have done the same,
20 letting them know that I know if anything does happen.

21 MR. MAYER: Sir, if I may, one of the points that
22 Counsel has just reminded me of that I wanted to bring
23 up was that: While I was on leave of absence from the
24 Church in Los Angeles, I was approached by a Guardian's

1 staff member. My wife at the time, Riva Bittelman, had
2 parents that lived in Miami; her father had been a
3 successful supermarket owner. They were very well known
4 and thought of in the Jewish community.

5 We were asked if we would consider infiltrating all
6 the local charities as fund raisers, using the father's,
7 you know, influence in the community to get -- you know,
8 go through the family ties, the lines. And what we were
9 supposed to do was infiltrate the charities, do a lot of
10 good fund-raising things, bring some money in, and at the
11 same time, you know, impress the local charities with our
12 competence and gradually gain some sort of control over
13 them.

14 It was decided about three weeks after we were
15 approached that, because we were so well known as Scien-
16 tologists around -- we had travelled extensively for
17 fourteen months for the Church's top management, bailing
18 orgs. out of financial trouble. They decided that we
19 were too well known, so they were going to use somebody
20 else to do it.

21 I'd check your local charities. You may have some-
22 body operating in there like I was asked to do.

23 MR. LeCHER: Okay. Let's get on a little different
24 track, then.

1 You said that you could pass a lie detector test;
2 you were trained to pass a lie detector test.

3 If you're that well trained, how can you -- could
4 you also, then, pass an E-Meter test?

5 MR. MAYER: That -- that's the same thing.

6 MR. LeCHER: I know that --

7 MR. MAYER: An E-Meter --

8 MR. LeCHER: You were -- you were -- you trained
9 people to lie --

10 MR. MAYER: Yeah.

11 MR. LeCHER: -- to lie so convincingly and so con-
12 vincingly well that you could pass a lie detector test.

13 MR. MAYER: No. That they could pass a lie detector
14 test on whether they could do it or not.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: Oh.

16 MR. HATCHETT: Oh.

17 MR. MAYER: And they couldn't go out until they'd
18 do it. That's how well trained they were. They knew
19 in no uncertain terms, when they left, that they could
20 get through any customs officials and complete their
21 mission. That's with officials -- immigration officials,
22 authorities, porters, whatever.

23 MR. LeCHER: They knew their --

24 MR. MAYER: Job cold, so cold that you could put

1 them on a lie detector and they were reading.

2 When I say "a reading," I mean, the lie detector
3 test would show that they were not lying when they said
4 they could do it.

5 MR. LeCHER: Then, how could you possibly fail the
6 E-Meter test when you were put back on that, like, for
7 auditing?

8 MR. MAYER: Well, if you had something that you
9 had done against the Church and had never told anybody
10 about it, that would read on the lie detector. It's an
11 area that you --

12 MR. LeCHER: You're taught to lie for specific
13 reasons for a job or a mission?

14 MR. MAYER: Okay.

15 There is a difference between active use of Scien-
16 tology intelligence technology and the use of the E-Meter
17 to find out whether or not a person's doing what they're
18 supposed to be doing. In one form you have, like, a
19 security check when somebody goes into a company.
20 Often -- now companies like Radio Shack, Tandy Corpora-
21 tion, now uses a lie detector test with regard to the
22 application form that you fill out for employment. So,
23 it's on that order of magnitude.

24 A staff member could be brought in at any time.

1 HCO - Hubbard Communications Office - had the right to
2 call in any staff member and put them on a Meter and find
3 out whether they had been doing their job, whether they
4 had been using Scientology standardly or not, and if they
5 failed, take whatever measures necessary to correct that.

6 On the other hand, you had training somebody so
7 well that you knew that they could do their job, and to
8 verify that they themselves knew that, put them on a lie
9 detector. And if they didn't feel a hundred percent con-
10 fidant, it would read.

11 The -- I can't begin to tell you how many hours
12 some of these people spend. I used to -- I'm sure you've
13 all heard the term "tone scale," emotional tone scale.
14 Maybe you -- oh, you haven't gotten into that.

15 Well, basically, what it is is it's a set of tech-
16 niques where you can bring somebody emotionally up or
17 emotionally down by being able to ascertain what they're
18 basically not confronting in life, what they're not will-
19 ing to face, take responsibility for. And I used to drill
20 with flash cards with another Guardian's Office staff
21 member on being able to move somebody involuntarily up
22 and down that scale by simply spotting where they were
23 really coming from in terms of their ability to confront
24 life.

1 Those drills are constantly run on Scientology
2 people that deal in public lines. They're done on
3 auditors and they're done on GO intelligence personnel,
4 only they're modified with GO intelligence personnel
5 for situations like a reporter: "Is a reporter bugging
6 you," to just, you know, take him up and take him down and just
7 confuse the hell out of him and get him out of your hair.
8 It's not all that hard to do. I've --

9 MRS. GARVEY: If you're having a problem with a
10 reporter?

11 MR. MAYER: And, listen, I've worked in intelli-
12 gence, Naval Intelligence, and it's not technology that's
13 unknown in this world. It's just modified for the use of
14 the Church. It's not something that L. Ron Hubbard just
15 made up on his own; it's standard intelligence procedure,
16 standard brainwashing technique.

17 MR. LeCHER: When you took money out of the country
18 in phony packages, did you take it out in cash?

19 MR. MAYER: The incident -- the biggest incident
20 that I know of personally was a fifty thousand-dollar
21 cash shipment that went to Flag when Alex Bersky was
22 called to Flag in 1971. There are other people that I
23 know of that took it back and forth -- this is a situati
24 where I was in the office and he said, "Yeah, I'm going to

1 bring Ron fifty thousand bucks." I think we made five
2 hundred thousand dollars that week in gross income.

3 In fact, I don't know whether you know it or not,
4 but, when I left Scientology, the Church of Scientology
5 in Clearwater, Florida was -- had a gross income of
6 five hundred to seven hundred thousand dollars a week.
7 And I know you people didn't see any of that money.

8 MR. LeCHER: Neither did the tax collector.

9 How much of a skimming do you think in Clearwater?

10 MR. MAYER: Well, you know, the policy of the -- of
11 LRH is to try to run an organization on twenty-five per-
12 cent or less of the gross income. Just how successful
13 they are now or anything, I don't know. But I know a lot
14 of staff members that ate potatoes and beans while there
15 was money being shipped off to the Guardian's Defense
16 Fund to handle the next enemy that they had created for
17 covert operations.

18 MR. LeCHER: So that's -- if you made a million
19 dollars, then, you would be a month -- a week, you would
20 be spending twenty-five -- two hundred and fifty thousand
21 dollars here, and the rest would go to L. Ron?

22 MR. MAYER: It would be filtered probably through
23 Worldwide, when Flag was not here in Clearwater, of course.

24 Well, during the course of the IRS, probably there

1 were some twenty some -- at one time thirty some bank
2 accounts in other countries where money could be sent to.
3 That came up in the IRS. At the time we did that trial
4 last year, they still had about twenty accounts that
5 were active, still had money in them.

6 MR. LeCHER: Well, the previous witness said about
7 ten percent is taken off the top.

8 MR. MAYER: That's just for the Guardian's Defense
9 Fund; that combats the kind of hearings we're having
10 right now.

11 MR. LeCHER: I'm -- who gets to start off again,
12 Mrs. Garvey?

13 MRS. GARVEY: I don't know where to start. I want
14 to keep him --

15 MR. MAYER: I have to catch a plane at five-thirty,
16 so that's all the time I've got. I wish I --

17 MR. CALDERBANK: You hadn't said that?

18 MRS. GARVEY: Let me first start on his background
19 or the outline.

20 What -- one on here was see check, operation see
21 check; underneath it's got E-Meter, lie detector. --

22 MR. MAYER: It probably should be sec check, not
23 see check; that's a typographical error.

24 MR. HATCHETT: Security.

1 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

2 MR. MAYER: Security check.

3 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

4 LA officer with a security check.

5 Then, you go down, there's one under large amounts
6 of cash out of the United States: inflating OTC expenses.

7 What are -- what's OTC?

8 MR. MAYER: Well, OTC was what Flag was outside of
9 this country.

10 When I first joined the Sea Organization, I thought
11 I was joining the Church of Scientology Sea Organization
12 to go through a ship's master training program. When I
13 went into my initial training, the first thing I got was
14 the policy letters or Flag orders that told me what I
15 had actually done was sign a contract with a corporation
16 called Operation Transport Corporation.

17 In the 1970's there was another corporation which
18 had been set up called Operation Transport Services,
19 which allegedly was another corporation that provided
20 management services and facilities, the lease of ships,
21 to the Sea Organization. It was all one thing, OTC, OTS,
22 Sea Organization, all the same animals.

23 In fact, we had to take people who were new to
24 Scientology that were going to Flag, and that was part of

1 my briefing job -- was to brief them on the fact that
2 they were really OTC when they got out of this country,
3 and there was nothing anywhere in writing that could be
4 used to prove otherwise. OTC was always run by L. Ron
5 Hubbard and always has been.

6 MR. FLYNN: I might note for the record at this
7 point, this particular item has legal significance for
8 a logical reason, which will become significant for
9 logical reasons at a later point in time.

10 It has personal significance for Mr. Meister, because
11 the Church of Scientology of California, which owned
12 all buildings -- the Church of Scientology of California,
13 which is a corporate entity, which owned all of the build-
14 ings in Clearwater, Florida until last December 13th,
15 wrote a letter to Mr. Meister involving the situation
16 of the death of his daughter under their letterhead of
17 the corporate entity. They say, "I'm sure you under-
18 stand that the ship's company, an independent Panamanian
19 agency, is under no obligations to the Church of Scien-
20 tology of California to provide information that it might
21 deem goes beyond the scope of a reasonable inquiry by
22 bereaved parents."

23 The independent Panamanian agency of the ship's
24 company is the Operation Transport Corporation, of which

1 the witness just referred.

2 MRS. GARVEY: Well, under the next one: Buildings
3 of the Church of Scientology of Clearwater -- I mean,
4 you'd -- from the operation of OTC, you'd build a church?

5 MR. MAYER: Let me explain this to you. I have a
6 letter, as a matter of fact, on OTC letterhead that intro-
7 duces me as the captain on one of the vessels. It was
8 written by Lieutenant Commander Bob Young, who was the
9 US Fleet Captain at the time. He was a Sea Org. Scien-
10 tology staff member. But he was also, in terms of this
11 letterhead, the US Fleet Captain for the Board of
12 Directors of OTC, Limited, Panama.

13 I have it. I have the original with the seal, the
14 OTC seal on it, too.

15 What would happen is the Church -- every -- either
16 twice or once a month, they would do what was called
17 financial planning. At that point in time the people
18 that were on the Flagship would requisition money to
19 ship's operation, all right? I don't know if any of you
20 have the remotest idea how much it costs to keep a ship
21 going.

22 But it's incredibly easy to have -- in a ship the
23 size of the Apollow, which had about four hundred crew
24 members on it - it was, roughly, about three hundred fifty

1 feet long - you can lose eighty thousand dollars in the
2 engine room in the spare parts bin. It's really simple.
3 Food costs.

4 We had an organization called OTS - which we were
5 instructed to no longer mention - which was actually
6 part of the Church, and was billing for services that it
7 then delivered to OTC. And the people who were deliver-
8 ing the services were Scientology staff members and
9 Apollo crew members.

10 I don't have to -- I don't think I have to go any
11 farther with showing you how it -- there is another point
12 though.

13 The Church uses a finance system which basically
14 breaks down into weekly income packets. Originally,
15 there was supposed to be an invoice log in all churches
16 that showed with invoice packets and number that were
17 given to Treasury so that the logs -- so people couldn't
18 mess around with the invoices.

19 What had basically ended up happening was the
20 Church had Scientology printers that would print up a
21 couple of sets of invoices. And I noticed after -- we
22 did a convention on it in 1970 that I was a part of, and
23 the IRS was making an inquiry into the Church's finances
24 at the time. I never saw a log book in any organization

1 after that point, all right? My wife's handwriting, later
2 on in '74, was on invoices that she couldn't possibly
3 have written. In other words, what I'm saying to you is
4 income packets can be pulled out on even so small a
5 thing as a weekly basis and totally altered, and there
6 will never be a record anywhere else that says that there
7 was any more money coming into the Church. It's all on
8 an invoice machine and it's done deliberately.

9 MRS. GARVEY: The next question I was going -- again,
10 down this outline is you talked about -- or mentioned
11 that you were placed in Enemy Condition.

12 When was that? And we've all been hearing about
13 RPF. What was RPS?

14 MR. MAYER: Well, you could be assigned to a --
15 primarily, it has to do with a lot of crimes against
16 Scientology. And those crimes could be things like not
17 applying the policy letter when you should have, not
18 having a good gross income for the week, not having it
19 go up steadily, maybe it went down for six weeks or some-
20 thing like that. So, you could be pulled off of a post
21 and put on the Rehabilitation Project Force. You were
22 held up to ridicule by literally everybody in the organi-
23 zation, you were not allowed to communicate to or --
24 communicate unless you were first communicated to by

1 somebody.

2 MRS. GARVEY: What --

3 MR. MAYER: I spent time in bilge one time for being
4 late from coming off liberty, and I spent twelve hours in
5 bilge water that deep in the bottom of one of the ships,
6 cleaning the scum off of the hull because I was late. And
7 I went without sleep at that particular time for about
8 thirty-six hours giving my amends to the Church for my
9 crime of not being on post in time.

10 I observed people in a chain locker on this ship
11 for a week on bread and water. A lady named Holly Judd
12 in a place called American Saint Hill Organization in Los
13 Angeles spent something like nine or ten days in a closed
14 room on bread and water, writing up all of her crimes
15 against humanity for the last trillion years, and the
16 Ethics Officer would throw them back into her and say
17 that wasn't enough.

18 MR. FLYNN: A point of correlation in terms of cor-
19 porate policy: You may correlate that testimony that you
20 just heard to the testimony of David Ray in the dumpster
21 with the garbage up to his chest.

22 MRS. GARVEY: Right.

23 You're also going to testify to some of the under-
24 cover criminal operations as to breaking into offices,

1 burglarizing, planting false information --

2 MR. MAYER: Well, that had to do --

3 MRS. GARVEY: -- as part of your missions?

4 MR. MAYER: -- with the Bill Foster story. I mean,
5 let's face it, I helped a man who was wanted by the
6 federal government get out of this country, and I got him
7 out real fast.

8 MRS. GARVEY: That's --

9 MR. MAYER: I don't know if the statute of limita-
10 tions is up or not.

11 I'm not here to defend myself. I've done what I've
12 done and you can make do with whatever you want to of it.
13 But I'm here because I know of a lot of very, very decent
14 people who've been jacked around by this organization,
15 their families disrupted, their lives -- I have not been
16 able to live in one place for the last three years. I
17 had to structure my whole occupation not around what I
18 can do but around what I am limited to doing in order to
19 avoid my background with the Church from being exposed to
20 an employer. And that's commonplace.

21 And I would like to see people, like -- the stuff
22 I've got is nothing. There are people that I know of that
23 have got things that would really curl your hair, and
24 they're afraid to step out. And I hope that these

1 hearings will discourage off a little the staff right now
2 in handling all of the flaps and, hopefully, all of the
3 things that happen will make them too undermanned to
4 resort to anything silly like, you know, physical harm to
5 people. And the people who would like to come out,
6 would like to resume their place in society and become
7 productive members of the community, could come out and
8 do it without being chastised for having made a mistake
9 in joining the organization.

10 MR. FLYNN: As City Consultant and having been
11 involved in the investigation of this organization for
12 three years, I can tell you that the individuals -- some
13 of the individuals whom Mr. Mayer refers to -- or many,
14 have contacted my office. I am under confidentiality with
15 regard to their identity.

16 But I can simply say, as the City Consultant, in my
17 investigation efforts, not only specifically for this
18 project but for the last three years, many, many, many
19 such individuals would like, in fact, to come out, but
20 they're in fear.

21 MRS. GARVEY: One of the vicious policies that we've
22 heard about in the past -- and it seems to relate to you,
23 also, is the disconnect with your wife.

24 MR. MAYER: Mm-mm.

1 MRS. GARVEY: Is there something about Scientology
2 material demanding divorce?

3 MR. MAYER: Well, initially, when I -- now, this
4 goes back to 1969, when I was on staff in Tustin, Cali-
5 fornia; I was still married at the time. I was intro-
6 duced to Scientology through a friend and heard lectures
7 and so on and so forth.

8 Because I had had a background in public speaking
9 in the United States Navy -- for sometime I explained my
10 submarine warfare techniques to Annapolis. Cadets that
11 would come out of the training crews -- and, understand,
12 this was during the Viet Nam War and we were the Flagship
13 for the Seventh Fleet. So, part of my daily duties was
14 to take a group of officers and train them on how to do
15 various things, and I had quite a bit of experience in
16 talking with people.

17 As a result of that, I was offered a job in the
18 Tustin Organization to teach their Communications course.
19 And I was just told that if I was willing to come in and
20 do it, they wouldn't charge me for the course or any-
21 thing, they'd give me the training on how to do it and I
22 would just do it. And I, subsequent to that, became
23 their Communication Course Supervisor, and I gave intro-
24 ductory lectures to public every Friday night that would

1 come in and sign up.

2 So, I was having a lot of marital problems at the
3 time, as a result of my association with Scientology.
4 So, I was asked to bring my wife in. There was an
5 attempted handling on her; she was put on a Meter and
6 asked a bunch of questions. And after it was all said
7 and done, she said, "I don't want to be a part of this."
8 She didn't know why; she just knew that she didn't. I
9 don't want to go into that any further.

10 But as a result of that, I was -- I was considered
11 to be what is called PTS, or a Potential Trouble Source
12 to the Church. The policy very clearly says, "Handle or
13 disconnect." And I said, "Well, she's not going to become
14 a Scientologist." "That's right." What else is there
15 to do? Disconnect.

16 So, at that point in time, you have to realize, I
17 had -- I had gotten into this a bit to the point where
18 I actually believed that part of my spiritual future was
19 involved with the Church. My wife was very heavily into
20 drugs at the time, and I had just come off of them. In
21 fact, one of the things that I had to do, in order to get
22 the job -- I'm not going to try and tell you that I came
23 back from Viet Nam in good shape; I didn't. And it was
24 years before I could stop hearing the gun at night. So,

1 I had to write a letter, promising that I would no longer
2 use drugs, in order - and that I was clean from them - in
3 order to be allowed on staff, all right?

4 So, basically, my wife was just another one of
5 your garden variety humanoids that was soaked into drugs,
6 and I was better off without her. And I went for it.
7 Whether that was right or wrong to decide on that, I did.
8 And that marriage was ruined as a result of my believing
9 the Church policy on the matter, that I couldn't recon-
10 cile a marriage unless my wife was a Scientologist.

11 MR. FLYNN: For the record, that policy is Exhibit
12 2.

13 MRS. GARVEY: How much pay did you get over -- or
14 your average salary?

15 MR. MAYER: Well, I had the tendency to make a
16 little more at it because I had bonuses that I would get;
17 I was a senior executive. But probably -- I probably
18 didn't average more than between fourteen and twenty
19 dollars a week for six years.

20 MRS. GARVEY: That was for the first six years.
21 What about the latter --

22 MR. MAYER: Well, I got a few bonuses. I got a
23 hundred and twenty-five dollar bonus for raising the
24 income at Saint Hill when I went over there with my wife.

1 And I tried to collect my earlier mission bonuses; some
2 of them were up to two hundred dollars for -- well, I
3 went into the Boston Organization and brought the income
4 up from about two thousand dollars to sixty thousand
5 dollars; I went into the Hawaii Organization and brought
6 the income up from about six or seven hundred dollars to
7 sixteen thousand dollars; Austin, Texas from nine dollars
8 and fifty cents to three thousand dollars a week.

9 I was supposed to be getting bonuses for that; you
10 know, just a nice little way to say, "Thanks for your
11 contribution."

12 MRS. GARVEY: How much bonus would you get if you --

13 MR. MAYER: I never got it.

14 MRS. GARVEY: Oh.

15 How much bonus would you have gotten if you had gone
16 down to Mexico to take care of the bandits?

17 MR. MAYER: Well, if it was a power mission - in
18 other words, there was no more problem - there could have
19 been up to a couple of hundred dollars, maybe two hundred
20 fifty dollars.

21 MRS. GARVEY: Oh, that was good.

22 MR. MAYER: But when I say "power," I mean, there's
23 no situation to be handled; it's terminatedly handled.
24 fact, that was what a mission was to do.

1 You didn't go out to do continuing handling on an
2 area; you didn't go out to provide progress reports about
3 what you were doing to overcome the situation there. You
4 went out there --

5 MRS. GARVEY: And did it.

6 MR. MAYER: -- to turn in a done; "I handled it.
7 The situation no longer exists."

8 The org. -- in fact, my -- the success of a mission
9 or not was judged on how well the income did for six
10 weeks after I left. If it dropped, I hadn't trained the
11 people that I put in to take over again well enough, and
12 I would have been considered a failed missionary, I would
13 have been made mission ineligible. Quite frankly, I
14 would have probably had to do a few amends' projects and
15 gotten a lower condition assignment.

16 There -- there's just no end to it. I don't know
17 how many incidences I could tell you of things like this
18 to get across to you that this is common, everyday, oper-
19 ating policy, always has been.

20 MRS. GARVEY: How much influenced were you by L.
21 Ron Hubbard's background --

22 MR. MAYER: I probably --

23 MRS. GARVEY: -- as getting in and staying?

24 MR. MAYER: Well, an awful lot, because I had come

1 out of the United States Navy.

2 And then, understand something, from the time I was
3 a little kid, my father was an Intelligence Aide to the
4 head of the Joint Chiefs of Staff in the Pentagon. He
5 was with Army Intelligence for twenty-five years. All
6 I had heard about all my life was Army, Navy, war games,
7 this sort of thing. And I had always wanted to be a
8 captain of a ship. I had had some success with the
9 navigation of the flagship that I was on.

10 It was my chance -- you know, it takes eight years
11 or more to get a certificate through the U.S. system, and
12 at times it's questionable about who controls that,
13 through the maritime system. Here I was offered a chance
14 to get my master's papers just by working -- you know,
15 in exchange for the work that I did. And in addition, I
16 was promised that I would get business degrees and -- I've
17 been very highly trained in business management tech-
18 nique.

19 I don't have a degree to show for it and, therefore,
20 when I go out for a job now, I have to hide those abili-
21 ties. I can't bring them out. I have no way of quali-
22 fying that because, if anybody calls OTC or the Church of
23 Scientology to verify my employment, I'm the worst guy
24 in the world.

1 MRS. GARVEY: I'm assuming that when you first got
2 into auditing, you assumed it was confidential.

3 Did you do any auditing yourself, once you realized
4 that it could be used against you?

5 MR. MAYER: You know, this is an interesting thing:
6 I was so busy being trained and going around doing
7 administrative things that I got very, very little Scien-
8 tology auditing, until my very last portion of time in
9 the Sea Organization. I didn't go on the clearing course
10 until I went to Saint Hill in '75, which was probably
11 six months before I was -- I got out; I went on a leave
12 of absence.

13 So, consequently, I didn't necessarily at that time
14 know an awful lot about the technology I was selling, but
15 I sure had been trained to sell.

16 MRS. GARVEY: But you also were using auditing
17 information?

18 MR. MAYER: Oh, certainly.

19 MRS. GARVEY: I mean, if you weren't audited, they
20 wouldn't have gotten any information out of you to use.

21 MR. MAYER: Well, no, not true; not true.

22 MRS. GARVEY: Not true.

23 MR. MAYER: Every Sea Org. member signs up, goes
24 through a security check --

1 MRS. GARVEY: All right.

2 MR. MAYER: -- on a Meter, your whole background.
3 There's -- at the time I went in, they were calling it a
4 Johannesburg Form, and it was just pages and pages of
5 questions about, you know: "Have you ever killed anybody?
6 Have you ever done this? Have you ever done that? Have
7 you ever infiltrated an organization? Are you here to
8 infiltrate us?" All done on a lie detector.

9 All of that data is then sent - and I was apprised
10 at the time that that data would be sent to Worldwide -
11 to the Guardian's Office Worldwide for an International
12 Ethics Clearance. If I passed -- if they could not find
13 any connection with what I had said on this form -- and
14 I mean, they asked some pretty personal questions.

15 MRS. GARVEY: Can you --

16 MR. MAYER: My sex life in Scientology is so well
17 documented that I can't even begin to care about it; you
18 know, it just wouldn't be worth it.

19 MR. FLYNN: That's Exhibit 6 in the record. The
20 Commission has seen some of those questions.

21 MRS. GARVEY: Yes.

22 MR. LeCHER: On his sex life?

23 MR. FLYNN: The Church of Scientology has been after
24 me for three years, and draw your own conclusions.

1 MR. MAYER: So, to answer -- in answer to your
2 initial question, all that initial data was sent to Inter-
3 national Ethics in Saint Hill, England. From that point
4 on, if I ever got into any trouble with the Church, and
5 there were a number of occasions when I did get into
6 trouble with various people, that information -- in fact,
7 at one point in time Ron Hubbard said, "Okay. We're going
8 to forgive you, you Scientologists, of all of the things
9 you've done against the Church." Well, they had us
10 writing up things that we had done throughout our entire
11 lifetime.

12 I sat for probably three days trying to think up
13 all the things, you know -- chopping the vines off my
14 mother's bushes, you know, when I was a little kid. And
15 that wasn't enough. They came back to us and said, "It's
16 not finished. Make sure it's finished." That all went
17 to the Guardian's Office and into our B 1 files. And we
18 had to do that to get the amnesty; we had to do that to
19 get forgiven. And that was not in a confessional session;
20 it was not done in session on the Meter.

21 MRS. GARVEY: Mm-mm.

22 MR. MAYER: That was: "Sit down and turn it over
23 to the Guardian's Office when you're done." The Assistant
24 Guardian of every organization collected them, and they

1 were forwarded to the files.

2 MRS. GARVEY: So, everyone in the Sea Org. had to
3 do this?

4 MR. MAYER: Any Assistant Guardian in any organiza-
5 tion of Scientology can call up the Secretary, the Techni-
6 cal Secretary, and order your folders brought in, your
7 confessional folders brought into his office. He can have
8 one of the Guardian's Office's own technically trained
9 people go over it and list all the crimes. That's how
10 they get the B 1 files. All the B 1 file is is a time
11 record, a day/time sequence of all the nasties you've
12 either done to others or to Scientology, and it's right
13 there on the cover and it's indexed just like a legal
14 file. I'm sure you've all seen legal files; it's just
15 like it.

16 So, if you get into any trouble anywhere, that
17 information is used for bringing you around in line.

18 MRS. GARVEY: To answer the question, though,
19 knowing that --

20 MR. MAYER: Sorry.

21 MRS. GARVEY: That's okay.

22 MR. FLYNN: I'll just make a point.

23 As the evidence will show as we proceed, the pro-
24 cesses of collecting information - by which this

1 organization collects information - are not just limited
2 to auditing information. As Ms. Peterson testified,
3 there's overt and covert data collection.

4 And the essential purpose of all of these processes
5 is to get information, whether you do it by breaking and
6 entering or breaching the fiduciary obligations with
7 regard to confidential auditing information.

8 MRS. GARVEY: The question that I was trying to get
9 at: Knowing that, that the auditing file will be used
10 against you - would not be kept confidential - did you
11 take any auditing after that?

12 MR. MAYER: Oh, sure.

13 MRS. GARVEY: Why?

14 MR. MAYER: Well, if I had refused the auditing, I
15 would have been refusing to apply Scientology myself and
16 I would have been expelled.

17 MRS. GARVEY: Okay. That --

18 MR. MAYER: I applied -- while I'm on the subject,
19 I myself have used data in a person's confessional folder
20 against him, all right?

21 One of the missions that I did - it was a Flag-
22 originated Mission; Flag was not in Clearwater at the
23 time - there was a staff member there who had been doing
24 some stuff with some animals. And the woman that was

1 sent -- she was in the country illegally, by the way;
2 she was sent with me. We brought the guy into the office
3 and just laid it out in front of him and said, you know,
4 "You either get on the stick or you're going to be
5 expelled, and that's your spiritual future." I've done
6 it myself.

7 MRS. GARVEY: Were you promised any kind of cures
8 for problems at any step you went?

9 MR. MAYER: I was promised that I would become a
10 worldbeing, capable of operating with or without a body.
11 And the -- actually, actually controlling, being able
12 to control, things and create effects in a room such as
13 this without having to be physically present.

14 MR. LeCHER: That could be characterized as
15 religion.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: How about your -- any type of
17 physical condition --

18 MR. LeCHER: What about Paul Hatchett? Do you
19 have a --

20 MRS. GARVEY: Well --

21 MR. LeCHER: We should follow in line.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: I'm sorry. I was just trying to
23 follow through on Mrs. Garvey's question.

24 MR. MAYER: I lost track of what the question --

1 MRS. GARVEY: Any physical ailments that they pro-
2 mised they'd cure or any mental problems that they pro-
3 mised that they would cure for you, in particular?

4 MR. MAYER: Not me in particular, no.

5 MRS. GARVEY: But they did promise other -- I mean,
6 that's standard practice?

7 MR. MAYER: Oh, yes.

8 MRS. GARVEY: The arthritis, cancer --

9 MR. MAYER: That's -- that's -- that is standard.
10 I mean, in fact, that's a very well publicized bit of
11 information in Scientology, that the medical profession
12 itself will admit to seventy percent plus of illnesses
13 being caused by psychosomatic conditions within a person,
14 and it was always hinted, in fact, that it was a hundred
15 percent, you know, in Scientology. Ron has stated it on
16 tape; he has it all taped. The road out of all that stuff
17 is already well mapped, we're the only ones that have it,
18 we don't owe it to anybody else, and they're going to
19 pay for it.

20 That's part of the training that you receive in the
21 Sea Org.

22 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

23 Paul Hatchett, I'd like to hear from you, sir. Do
24 you have a question -- any questions?

1 MR. HATCHETT: Mr. Mayer, you were a senior execu-
2 tive, you know, for several long years, and you got real
3 close to Mr. Hubbard personally; is that right?

4 MR. MAYER: I worked directly with him on some
5 projects, but I wouldn't say that I was a close, personal
6 friend of Mr. Hubbard's, no.

7 MR. HATCHETT: Okay.

8 Why this Apollo? Apparently, it was used for
9 retreats, right? Was it ever used for a retreat while
10 you were captain of it?

11 MR. MAYER: I was the ship's manager of the Apollo.

12 It was not a retreat; it was a training center where
13 high -- allegedly high-level services could be delivered
14 to the Church parishioners. And that could be anything
15 from a Flag Executive Briefing Course, which was how to
16 make a superexecutive for an organization, to some of
17 their spiritual counseling. It could be -- we used to
18 routinely send -- in fact, we would be ordered at times
19 and billed for it to send staff members from various
20 churches for special events and training courses, manage-
21 ment rundown, big league sales courses. Up registrars
22 would be sent to get a big league sales course, which
23 would teach them how to effectively handle opposition to
24 sell Scientology.

1 I sold Scientology as a Flag Service Consultant
2 myself for a while.

3 MR. HATCHETT: Were you ever -- on the Apollo, did
4 it ever set sail through the Mediterranean, Africa, or
5 anywhere --

6 MR. MAYER: No, not there.

7 MR. HATCHETT: Just the eastern part of the United
8 States?

9 MR. MAYER: Yes.

10 MR. HATCHETT: Can you give me an idea of some ports
11 you stopped in along the eastern coast?

12 MR. MAYER: Well, the only ports that I was involved
13 in before I left was, basically, the Netherlands Antilles
14 area: Aruba, Curacao, Bonaire. And I was subsequently
15 sent off on a mission from there before I was able to do
16 anything -- at that time they were in the process of
17 getting ready to come into the United States or go some-
18 where to have a Flag Land Base.

19 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you.

20 If I understood you correctly in your testimony,
21 you mentioned something about that you were aboard ship
22 and you observed people being in chain lockers?

23 MR. MAYER: Yes. A chain locker is where the
24 anchor chain goes down into the very rusty, scummy, dirty

1 area of the ship, because mud that comes up from the
2 anchor chain and through the hawse pipe goes down --
3 falls down into it. So, it's notoriously the filthiest
4 place that you can find on a ship. Well, that's where
5 somebody would be sent to think it over.

6 MR. HATCHETT: Okay.

7 MR. MAYER: You'd get bread and water until you
8 come out and your thinking was in line with the goals and
9 purposes of the group.

10 MR. HATCHETT: Can you just help me a little bit
11 how you regularly defraud the American government and cus-
12 toms?

13 MR. MAYER: I really?

14 MR. FLYNN: Regularly.

15 MR. MAYER: Oh, regularly?

16 MR. HATCHETT: How you --

17 MR. MAYER: Well, because there were regular ship-
18 ments that went from -- all of the churches in the -- for
19 instance, in the United States, at the time I was active
20 in the Church, sent all of their weekly income statis-
21 tics - how much they'd spent, how much they made, how
22 many hours of auditing they had delivered - sent it to
23 the central location, which was called a Flag Operations
24 Liaison Office. From there, all the data would be

1 compiled, checks -- whatever they were going to send.

2 And what took place within that liaison office is
3 called External Communications. The person who directly
4 ran External Communications was the only person that was
5 allowed to know either where the Flagship was or where
6 to send that material to another liaison office so it
7 could be then forwarded on to the Flagship.

8 So, you're talking about everyday trips out to the
9 airport. Everyday trips out to the airport may be any-
10 where from six to ten couriers a week going out. And
11 this is for years. So, there's an incredible amount of
12 Scientology traffic all around the world, and most of it
13 is done under the guise of tourism or students.

14 I sent Japanese nationals to the United States for
15 training when I ran a project in Tokyo, Japan. Gee, it
16 was easy to get Japanese to sign a billion-year contract,
17 because they sign life contracts over there anyway. If
18 you'd ask them to go to work for three years, they'd think
19 you were crazy. See, so, it's real easy to sign them up.

20 All you would do is provide them with a letter for
21 Immigration, stating they were either coming for a visit
22 or they were going to get some training at the local
23 Church, and then they would be -- well, most of them
24 didn't stick around; they -- it -- what was really funny

1 was the living conditions were too crowded for even the
2 Japanese.

3 MRS. GARVEY: But they're small people.

4 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you.

5 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Shoemaker.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Mayer, we had testimony before
7 about the -- there are certain groups which are in the
8 Church now, which were referred to as front groups, the
9 Gerus Society for the elderly -- several types of services
10 who were actually located under the Guardian's Office.

11 MR. MAYER: Right.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: I don't know what they were called
13 at the time that you were in the Church, but --

14 MR. MAYER: I can tell you one right now that has
15 to do with children: Applied Scholastics.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: That one's still in, yes.

17 MR. MAYER: All right.

18 A good friend of mine, Amanda Ambrose, who was at
19 one time a singer -- Amanda was a Sea Org. member. I
20 worked with her -- she worked with me out of a Celebrity
21 Center; we socialized together. She's a black singer.
22 She did a very successful run in one of the productions
23 in Los Angeles; the name escapes me.

24 But she was loaned by the Sea Organization to the

1 Guardian's Office as the Executive Director of Applied
2 Scholastics. Her husband was the educator; in other
3 words, he had all his degrees, all his qualifications and
4 stuff. But she was the one that ran the show, and she was
5 a Sea Org. member. She took her order, her project, from
6 the Guardian's Office. And she was a Sea Org. member on
7 loan to them as Executive Direcotr of Applied Scholastics.

8 That's a direct incident that I know, because I
9 had -- I took one of my friend's children that was having
10 trouble with reading and had him put through the program.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: What was the basic purpose of those
12 kinds of programs, do you know, at the time?

13 MR. MAYER: Infiltration in the community.

14 That -- I think, maybe, I could sum this all up with
15 a quote from LRH that I got out of one -- I think it was
16 Control of -- it's called SCS: The Mechanics of Con-
17 trol. And it comes from chapter fourteen, and it says:
18 "Man has too long suffered under a school of thought,
19 miceology, which teaches one to conform to the environ-
20 ment. A Scientologist, however, knows that the real
21 victory can only be achieved by commanding the environ-
22 ment, and this is the task that we have on our hands."

23 That's a direct LRH quote.

24 MRS. GARVEY: Control --

1 MR. MAYER: And I'm talking about your community
2 being infiltrated on a regular basis by psychopolitical
3 operatives who have been well trained. And that is the
4 basic simplicity.

5 And everything that I have said today is to try and
6 drive that point home to you. It is no accident.

7 I trained some, and I know some of them. And now
8 I would like to see that facade all broken apart because
9 Scientology does not deliver what it promises.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Mayer, you had referred before
11 that, when you were up here in Clearwater, that there was
12 a department that was actually changing invoices and had
13 an invoice machine and so forth.

14 Would I be correct in saying that they did not keep
15 regular types of accounting books of the accounting?

16 MR. MAYER: Oh, no. There's specific policy for-
17 bidding it.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, there are no books which say --
19 or ledgers which show --

20 MR. MAYER: Standard accounting procedures are
21 forbidden: too easy to rectify.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Well, how do they --

23 MR. MAYER: Every sale that is made by the Church
24 is written down at one time on this four-part - and I

1 believe it's five-part now - invoice.

2 One of the invoices is supposed to be a running
3 record, okay, it's supposed to be unbroken. But the fact
4 of the matter is that they're broken up into weekly and
5 monthly packets so that they can be retrieved very easily,
6 all right? The various copies go to various places in
7 the organization. A copy would go to the Public Division
8 so that name would be on file and that person could be
9 contacted for services later on.

10 A couple of the parts were kept -- one went into
11 the Purchasing Files so we would know who the vendors
12 were, who we bought from, prices and things like that.
13 The other one was, of course, your regular copy that you
14 saved for your records.

15 Other than breakdowns done for the Guardian's
16 Office, there were no ledgers kept as you would in stan-
17 dard bookkeeping procedures. And as a result of what
18 I went through with the Church and what I testified to in
19 the IRS, those documents are very, very easily change-
20 able. All you have to do is take out one week's income
21 packet and slap in a new one with the same number. When
22 you've got your own printer and a printing press, it's
23 pretty easy to make two sets of invoices or three or four.

24 I can't prove the extent that they did it. But the

1 figures that I gave to the IRS, in terms of the Church's
2 overall income during the time I was responsible for it,
3 did not jive with the reports of the Church of Scien-
4 tology. And they're still looking for the money.

5 Okay. Cash flow goes from the Church to the Banking
6 Officer. Every organization has an Assistant Guardian
7 for Finance and a Flag Banking Officer or a Finance Bank-
8 ing Officer. The Finance Banking Officers are under the
9 charge of the Commodore's Staff for Finance, which was
10 last year Fran Broker, and each organization has an
11 Assistant Guardian for Finance. And that data goes up
12 through Worldwide to Herb Parkhouse, who is the Guardian
13 of the Church and its funds. And then from there it
14 goes -- reports are sent back to wherever she happens to
15 be. For a while, it was here in Clearwater.

16 But the point I'm getting at is that that money
17 is traceable from the organization directly to the Flag
18 Land Base or to wherever Flag is or Mary Sue or whoever's
19 in charge of finance.

20 Now, understand, it is a policy of the Sea Organiza-
21 tion to be baiting you. To put an organization like
22 Saint Hill there, that you think is the organization that
23 runs the Church on a role-model basis, and, while you're
24 busy trying to get something out of them, all the records

1 can be put on a ship and moved somewhere else in the
2 world.

3 One of the -- one of the jobs that I had as the
4 station ship captain on the west coast was to have that
5 ship ready at any time to go into LA harbor and cart all
6 the files off, plus whatever executive staff we could fit
7 on the ship, to take them -- part of the land base was to
8 have a land base in Mexico where we could scoot into LA
9 and load them all up. The Excalibur was bought for that
10 purpose: to load the executives and files up and right
11 down the coast into Ensenada and set it up and move it
12 on out from there.

13 MR. FLYNN: You will recall, when I stated earlier,
14 that all of the Red Box data, some, probably, eighty to
15 a hundred thousand documents, were missed by the FBI
16 because they went, first, to one location and the Red
17 Box data was somewhere else.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Mayer, you had indicated that
19 you worked with the IRS on their particular tax case in
20 Los Angeles and, also, that you worked -- did some legal
21 research, I believe you said, to the -- City Attorney, did
22 you say?

23 MR. MAYER: Oh, that's private. I do legal
24 administration --

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: Right.

2 I was just going to ask, though: Have you testi-
3 fied before any other governmental agencies or have you
4 talked to any federal authorities, like, the Postal
5 Service or --

6 MR. MAYER: For the last several years, the only
7 two people - and I say "people," because I'm grouping Mr.
8 Flynn and his associates together - the only two persons
9 that have known where I am, including my family a great
10 deal of the time, was Martin Cohen of the IRS and Mr.
11 Flynn and his associates. And whenever I would move, I
12 would call them up and tell them how to get in touch with
13 me.

14 You have to understand, I was very reticent to
15 testify for a long, long time because I wanted to have a
16 chance of enjoying my life after I did so. And I think
17 that there's been enough light shed on the operations of
18 the Church now where they'd have to be a fool to start
19 knocking people off.

20 And I know people -- I know a person that was asked
21 to do away with somebody that's still out there. And one
22 of the -- and Mr. Allard, who testified at the IRS trial,
23 had been searched for by that person for quite some time
24 and actually had met. So, there are people -- I went

1 through a self-defense training course with one of the
2 Guardian's Office black belt people when I went to get
3 Quentin Hubbard's body back. You know, I said, "Well, I've
4 already had self-defense training from the service," and
5 so on. And he said, "Well, listen, what do you think
6 they're -- you better be able to defend yourself. What
7 do you think that they're going to do when they find out
8 what you guys are doing? You better know how to defend
9 yourself."

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: Do you - this doesn't really, I
11 think, have anything to do with our hearing but - do you
12 have any idea of what, in fact, happened to Quentin
13 Hubbard?

14 MR. MAYER: I -- I have a very strong personal
15 feeling about what happened to Mr. Hubbard, based on some
16 things that were told to me in confidence from his con-
17 fessional folder by my wife, my ex-wife. And I don't
18 know whether it's all right to get into that area or not.

19 MR. LeCHER: That's immaterial to these hearings.

20 MR. MAYER: I don't believe that --

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

22 I don't have any further questions.

23 MR. LeCHER: Jim Calderbank, do you have any
24 questions?

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah.

2 I'm going to follow up on something Mr. Berfield
3 has been using quite a bit. And that's, number one,
4 your credibility, Mr. Mayer.

5 You come before us and you talk about -- I want
6 to get this straight, first. You talked about some very,
7 very criminal acts, conspiracies, racketeering charges,
8 international crimes. And, you know, you have to first
9 see who's saying it.

10 MR. MAYER: What's that?

11 MR. CALDERBANK: You have to first try to establish
12 who is saying it.

13 Now, you've been a witness for the IRS in their
14 tax cases?

15 MR. MAYER: Yes, sir.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: Was that under oath and --

17 MR. MAYER: Yes.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: -- was the testimony utilized
19 extensively in their case?

20 MR. MAYER: Yes, sir.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: What is your -- what is your reason
22 for coming here today?

23 MR. MAYER: Because I want to go back to living a
24 normal life. And an incredible amount of decent people

1 that went into Scientology in good faith have been
2 betrayed and they are no longer able to live normal
3 lives and they have to fear for their family, because of
4 the fact that they're afraid of getting bumped off for
5 what they know.

6 And that's what it really boils down to. You know,
7 I'm probably being heavy bearing on this fact, but I don't
8 let anybody know where I'm living. And I can't get
9 married until I'm certain that I know that my daughter,
10 who is hidden - well hidden somewhere - and my wife, Bedie,
11 are going to be able to live a normal life.

12 And if you want to know about my credibility as an
13 executive, I have it in writing from Ron Hubbard. And I
14 have it here in my pocket.

15 MR. FLYNN: On that point, I might also say that
16 many people that Mr. Mayer has referred to -- our office
17 has encouraged many people and told them that, perhaps,
18 the best approach to the whole problem, to which he just
19 referred, is to go public, be public in the public light.
20 And that may be their -- in fact, forever, their best
21 protection.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. Mayer, we just -- that -- that
23 wasn't on you personally. We've asked that of every wit-
24 ness because the City of Clearwater might be well educated

1 to what has been happening over the years, with documents
2 all the way to this hearing. You know, there are other
3 people in other government agencies after this that may
4 be looking at these hearings and they're not as familiar
5 with this type of thing as we are. So, that's why for
6 each witness we try to also establish some credibility.

7 MR. MAYER: You have to realize, too, that during
8 the course of the IRS trial, I had been through all of
9 the federal government's documents on Scientology, I mean,
10 stacks of them, and I read them all.

11 With regard to the other thing, I have a letter from
12 L. Ron Hubbard, my ex-wife and I, that states, I quote:
13 "I want you and Scott placed where you can do the most
14 for Scientology. You are both very capable executives
15 and you well know how merited this is." And it's signed
16 by L. Ron Hubbard and it's dated 12th of July 1975.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: On the -- you were talking about
18 records and how quickly they can be moved, destroyed,
19 falsified, changed.

20 If this is true and you do get records, and records
21 are -- are records meticulously kept of times, places,
22 people? How do you tell which records are true and which
23 records are false?

24 MR. MAYER: Well, I would guess that would be in

1 relation to the area that you were examining. I per-
2 sonally would not look at -- I was sitting in an office
3 with Marty Greenberg, who was a CPA for the Church, when
4 he told us how they were beating the IRS investigation.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: So, why --

6 MR. MAYER: So, I certainly wouldn't place any
7 confidence in their financial records at all.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: You're saying the IRS was investi-
9 gating the Church of Scientology and the Church employed
10 a CPA that actually falsified the records?

11 MR. MAYER: Yeah. He's a member of the Guardian's
12 Office.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: And you also said that --

14 MR. MAYER: He wasn't any way -- he wasn't available
15 for testimony during the IRS trial for some reason.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: When these couriers went through
17 customs, were any caught?

18 MR. MAYER: As in -- well, in one particular
19 instance that I recall, one of the couriers misplaced a
20 package with about twenty-five thousand dollars that was
21 coming into Los Angeles, and it got -- I believe it was
22 recovered, but it was lost on the plane for a while.

23 I don't know of any incident where anybody was
24 caught in terms of -- as a crime.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: What did Mr. Foster do? You
2 stated that you helped him escape from the country when
3 he was under federal indictments or he had warrants out
4 for his arrest. Can you get into that?

5 MR. MAYER: Yes. But I wanted him connected to the
6 Church when I did it, do you understand --

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Right.

8 MR. MAYER: -- because he was very, very afraid of
9 being left high and dry. So, I sent him out as a Church
10 staff member to Canada, across the border, as a tourist.
11 And in actual fact, he was going to take over an organiza-
12 tion in Canada at that time, and did so.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Well, what was his -- what did the
14 officials in this country want him for?

15 MR. MAYER: Breaking and entering. He was part of
16 the team that did all the busting into the newspaper
17 offices and Mr. Flynn's office at the time. His cover
18 had been blown.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

20 And then, so, you -- when you --

21 MR. FLYNN: I'd like to correct that for the record.
22 There will be testimony from the individual -- from
23 another level individual, who Mr. Mayer didn't know at
24 the time, who is in the room here who will be testifying

1 about the offices - some of the offices - in his group
2 that were broken into.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: And -- okay. Let's get back to
4 the money leaving the country.

5 You said most of the money either came through
6 Flag or was generated from Flag, which is Clearwater,
7 Florida?

8 MR. MAYER: You know, we're talking about a seven-
9 year time span wherein the exact location of Flag was
10 moved many, many times.

11 What I was telling you about was the procedure, and
12 this is what I think is really important because we're
13 dealing with day-to-day business activities: a system
14 that is used to take records, money, anything, personnel,
15 transport personnel under the guise of one thing when,
16 in actuality, it was another thing.

17 I could not testify, for instance, as to the exact
18 number of thousands of dollars that were couriered out.
19 I just know that we didn't have it to spend in Los
20 Angeles after we made it; it was gone.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: And in -- how -- which money was
22 this? How did they get the money?

23 MR. MAYER: Well, it's -- understand, all of the
24 income from every organization is reported to the Guardian

1 Finance personnel and the Banking Officer on a weekly
2 basis. Those persons -- for instance, Mike Smith, who
3 was the Flag Banking Officer at the time - he was US
4 Flag Banking Officer - would be given quotas. He would
5 be telexing quotas of money to send to Flag. And as a
6 result of what requirements were, I would be required to
7 brief couriers to have that sent out.

8 MR. FLYNN: One more clarification for the record:
9 In 1970 and '71, I was in the law firm of Bingham, Dana &
10 Gould; I'm not currently in that law firm. One of the
11 Guardian's Office operations was to steal documents from
12 the firm of Bingham, Dana & Gould, to which I am no longer
13 affiliated. At the time, of course, I didn't know it;
14 I didn't know anything about the Church of Scientology.

15 The individual who was involved in that particular
16 operation, or some of those operations, is in the court-
17 room. But substantiation has to be made on the record
18 between my present office and the firm of Bingham, Dana &
19 Gould, to which I used to be attached.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

21 You mentioned a lot of military references: mission,
22 elimination, check operatives, security checks, mission
23 completed, and that type of thing.

24 Did you ever see or use any stolen government

1 equipment? How did you get these intelligence procedures
2 from the U.S. government?

3 MR. MAYER: Where Mr. Hubbard got his original
4 information, I have no idea. I'm -- what I was referring
5 to -- these were -- these are techniques which you your-
6 self as a hearing committee can go out and research and
7 read about yourself, now.

8 The point I was trying to make is that they're not
9 something that was just dreamed up out of the sky as some
10 supertechnology. It's pretty standard stuff.

11 MR. CALDERBANK: And very interesting.

12 What would you say as your final comment to the
13 people in Clearwater? You said you wanted to remove the
14 facade? What would you say to Clearwater and what would
15 you say to the Pinellas County tax authorities? What
16 would you say to people that should be interested in the
17 Church of Scientology?

18 MR. MAYER: Well, I've got probably about eight or
19 nine points down here.

20 I think that -- understand something, having worked
21 with a municipal government - like I said, I'm on call
22 to the Environmental Services in Los Angeles and the City
23 Attorney's Office - I'm familiar with a task force type
24 of activity. The City of Santa Monica has established

1 within the several advisory departments of the City
2 Attorney's Office, an office called Consumer Affairs,
3 whereby people in the community who have been mistreated
4 by businesses may call up and make a complaint and they
5 will be contacted by the Consumer Affairs person and a
6 hearing will be set up and arbitration will be attempted,
7 all right?

8 I recommend that very highly to this city, unless
9 you can provide a communicational line and someplace safe
10 for all the people that are sitting over in that hotel
11 right now who would get out if they thought they'd stand
12 a chance of making it, you know, without getting hung
13 for criminal activities. I think they'd start popping
14 up like crazy, and they've got stuff that I never even,
15 you know, came close to doing.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: My last question is what the Mayor
17 was asking about why you moved into Clearwater. It's
18 just a personal question.

19 You mentioned about politics when they came in.
20 And at the time the City Commission -- did they feel,
21 either by having skeletons in the closet or by inactivity,
22 that they would not be as hotly pursued?

23 MR. MAYER: Well, I can't answer that in terms of
24 what they or the operations officers at that time were

1 doing.

2 The simplicity of it is is that it's the goal of
3 Scientology to make every single person on this planet a
4 Scientologist and to get the technology that Scientology
5 has, quote, administrative and counseling technology
6 integrated into the society. And every single person
7 that signed one of those billion-year contracts was will-
8 ing to put their life on the line to make sure it happened
9 for a billion years.

10 MR. LeCHER: You asked him a question, Mr. Calderbank,
11 and I don't know if you completed your answer, Mr. Mayer,
12 but you asked him for advice. And you were going to give
13 us eight or nine points.

14 MR. MAYER: Oh.

15 MR. LeCHER: I'd like you to give us those eight
16 or nine points.

17 MR. MAYER: All right.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: And also, advice on what we should
19 do if we feel there are any dirty tricks up the road.

20 MR. MAYER: Okay.

21 I firmly believe that you should have either a
22 volunteer or someone appointed but operating from the
23 City Attorney's Office in terms of a consumer complaint
24 line.

1 You're talking about -- when somebody plops down
2 eighty thousand dollars to come to Flag - and I've sold
3 packages that big - to come here, to get services and
4 they don't get them, where are they going to go to deal
5 with that, religion or no religion? I don't believe for
6 one second that Scientology is a bona fide religion.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: We can't --

8 MR. MAYER: So, you know --

9 MR. LeCHER: We don't want to get into that.

10 MR. MAYER: So, there ought to be a place where
11 somebody that's mistreated by the Church can call to get
12 some assistance, to be able to lodge a formal complaint.
13 Unethical sales practices are unethical sales practices
14 no matter what product you're using.

15 I think that a hotline could be established, much
16 like the hotlines that people use for turning in crimes
17 or if there's a suicide line or something like that.
18 Perhaps, one of the lines could be made available to
19 people who have complaints or are being what they -- they
20 feel they're being held against their will. And I think
21 that those kinds of calls, once the person is safely
22 outside, in other words -- I think that stuff should be
23 publicized.

24 Perhaps, halfway houses could be -- to contact a

1 volunteer to provide a place to stay for a staff member
2 that wanted to make -- have a reasonable chance of getting
3 to that airport and out back to -- some of them haven't
4 seen more than ten dollars in their pocket for years.
5 And most of that was spent on, you know, little things
6 they just needed. So, where are they going to get the
7 money to get out of here?

8 All you do, you see, when you allow them to stay
9 here is to allow the Guardian's Office to get into its
10 thing about handling them and continue to make this sort
11 of thing grow. So, if there was a reasonably safe line
12 established where people who wanted to get out -- Scien-
13 tologists who didn't want to be in the community to get
14 out. That would be really great for them.

15 I think you could have a research team look into
16 legitimate counseling techniques, legitimate professionals
17 in the area that could be called upon to do volunteer
18 work or could be advertised or promoted by your city
19 information area to let people with problems know that
20 there are legitimate counseling groups around that can
21 help them, so they won't have to feel like they have to
22 stay within the Church of Scientology in order to handle
23 whatever it is that's bothering them. There could be
24 lists published of people where people could go.

1 I think that you could well make use of your Fire,
2 your Zoning, your Building Inspectors to ensure that
3 local regulations, the municipal ordinances, that you
4 have are complied with. And I very highly advocate that
5 those are surprise, frequent, not standard inspections,
6 but be done on a basis where you just walk in and go
7 through it: you list the violations and they're recorded
8 and you issue your warnings and so on and so forth, and
9 come back and check it out, not only when it was supposed
10 to be done but maybe a week after it was supposed to be
11 done and you received evidence. Go back and see if it's
12 still there. You might have ten people in a room that
13 you certified as now being habitable - a week after
14 you -- they've reported compliance.

15 So, I think you could use those ordinances to --
16 the main point that I'm trying to make here is that if you
17 are willing to be responsible for making Scientology
18 behave in an ethical manner in this community, they are
19 going to have to do it. They -- I don't think that they
20 have the guns anymore. I think there's too many people
21 leaving the Church too fast for them to cover all of the
22 areas that they're already in non-compliance with in
23 terms of local breaches.

24 I think you could inform the Customs officials out

1 here, Immigration officials that there are regular ship-
2 ments of people that are coming in and out allegedly as
3 students or tourists who are not in the country legally.
4 And make sure that those get -- make sure that -- check
5 it out and see whether or not there aren't four or five
6 different businesses out here at Tampa Airport that are --
7 don't really exist but are shipping out Scientologists,
8 materials, money --

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. Mayer, thank you very much.

10 MR. MAYER: Yes, sir.

11 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield, do you have any ques-
12 tions?

13 MR. BERFIELD: Yes, just a few.

14 Mr. Mayer, you made mention of these files that
15 were brought in here about the size of this room.

16 The last time you were in Clearwater, do you know
17 if those still existed?

18 MR. MAYER: The last time I was here in Clearwater
19 I used them.

20 MR. BERFIELD: You used those files?

21 MR. MAYER: Sure. I was being briefed here for a
22 mission. I went out of here on a mission to go handle
23 another area of the world. All of the data on those
24 organizations resided here. It was used to evaluate the

1 situation so somebody could determine that I had to go
2 in the first place.

3 I didn't just get -- somebody didn't just indis-
4 criminate call me from a job of fixing up the Flagship
5 Apollo to send me to South Africa to handle a situation.
6 There were a lot of reports that were sifted through,
7 evaluated. The local political scene in South Africa,
8 at the time I went -- I left when twenty thousand Afri-
9 cans were marching on Johannesburg during the Zaire riots.
10 I got out of town the day that happened, all right? So,
11 the political scene was evaluated. And I was ordered to
12 get my eh-eh out of there.

13 So, it's no accident that those files were there,
14 and they were used for the purpose of evaluating Church
15 operations.

16 MR. BERFIELD: But are these files that we're making
17 reference to files that are here in Clearwater from
18 people all over the United States and, possibly, all over
19 the world? And they're files that could be used for
20 covert actions, is that correct, blackmail, or whatever
21 you wish to call it?

22 MR. MAYER: Anything they wanted to do with it.

23 That's a good point. It would be pursuant to the
24 policy of the Church at the time.

1 MR. BERFIELD: Whatever the Church policy, there's
2 sufficient information in these files to --

3 MR. MAYER: Understand that Church policy is a very
4 malleable tool, all right? There is a staff of people
5 that work -- have worked under Ron Hubbard and Mary Sue
6 to carry out their intentions, their goals and purposes,
7 on a planetwide basis.

8 Every little treasury secretary in every organiza-
9 tion around the world reports, at least once a week, to
10 a Guardian's Office staff member and a Flag staff member
11 here to Clearwater that is responsible for that area.
12 Here it would be, like, CS 3, Commodore's Staff.

13 Commodore's Staff means, "I do this action for L.
14 Ron Hubbard." That's the job. And the assistant for that
15 area evaluates the overall international scene with all
16 the other assistants from various areas to come up with
17 what is called The Weekly Battle Plan, and it's not mis-
18 named, either. It is a weekly battle plan on how Scien-
19 tology is going to be expanded in all its operations all
20 over the world.

21 MR. BERFIELD: This is just kind of a curious ques-
22 tion: Did you ever get your mate's papers from --

23 MR. MAYER: I have them, but --

24 MR. BERFIELD: -- U.S. Customs, U.S. Coast Guard

1 papers, or --

2 MR. MAYER: No. I was -- I am registered as cap-
3 tain in the Honduran and the Panamanian Merchant Marines.

4 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know -- you had mentioned --
5 I call them shell or front for paper companies.

6 Do you know whether or not the Church of Scientology
7 has any shell or paper companies here in the State of
8 Florida?

9 MR. MAYER: In present -- at the present time, no.
10 I haven't had anything to do with Clearwater since I left
11 in '77 -- '76.

12 MR. BERFIELD: Now, I don't mean to sound harsh
13 on this, but in what you have told us, you have a tre-
14 mendous background in Scientology and you've given us a
15 lot of facts and figures.

16 And one of the things that Mr. Calderbank tried to
17 elicit from you - and I'm not so sure we got it all from
18 you - is: With all of this information and the fact that
19 your family or your child's life is at stake and, possi-
20 bly, your future is at stake, what would provoke you
21 from coming down here -- not provoke you, what caused you
22 to come down here?

23 If I could go a step further --

24 MR. MAYER: A coward dies a thousand deaths. And

1 I don't intend to run from Scientology for the rest of
2 my life. We're going to have it out; that's all there
3 is to it.

4 I'm not going -- I'm not going to destroy my life;
5 I'm not going to be away from my family; I'm not going to
6 remain away from my daughter because there's some organi-
7 zation that puts out the picture to everybody in it that
8 it's powerful enough to come out and do them in if they
9 don't play ball. And I think it's time for that kind of
10 stuff to stop.

11 All they -- I made it through Nam. My life's been
12 blessed since then, all right? I don't have anything to
13 lose except my life, and I've lived a very full life.
14 And I don't intend to spend the rest of it running from
15 the Church of Scientology, period.

16 MR. BERFIELD: The story that -- the story that
17 you have told us sounds like something that one of our
18 novelists might be able to write if they took the time.
19 And I guess what I'm trying to say to you is: It is so
20 fictitious -- not fictitious. It is so fantastic and
21 incredible --

22 MR. CALDERBANK: Bizarre.

23 MR. BERFIELD: -- and, as Mr. Calderbank just said,
24 bizarre that, unless the people are watching television --

1 MR. MAYER: You can't see the forest for the trees.

2 MR. BERFIELD: -- this story will not get out to
3 the public. How can we get it out to the public?

4 MR. MAYER: You guys have just scratched the sur-
5 face; you haven't -- you haven't even touched any of the
6 good stuff, yet. You're just getting to it. And, hope-
7 fully, what's going on here will bring people out of the
8 woodwork that can tell you stories that make my stuff
9 look like small potatoes.

10 MR. BERFIELD: One other question that I have and
11 then I'll leave you alone because it appears like I'm
12 trying to crucify you: Did you know what these hearings
13 were about before you came down here?

14 MR. MAYER: All I knew was that hearings were being
15 conducted. There were people that I had known in Scien-
16 tology that were going to be here. And -- well -- see,
17 I made my commitment when I went -- when I agreed to
18 testify for the IRS.

19 Commander Bob Young, who I was in business with
20 at the time - a business outside of Scientology, but we
21 were in business together - was also approached by the
22 IRS. Mr. Young chose to take a trip around the world
23 and become no longer visible to the Church of Scientology,
24 and I had to decide at that time whether I wanted to stay

1 in hiding another three, four, five, or six years until
2 somebody found out enough about what was going on to give
3 me a running chance.

4 Now, I'm not asking for police protection for the
5 rest of my life. I just want a reasonable chance to be
6 able to continue it without having to be looking over my
7 shoulder all the time and worrying about whether my
8 daughter is going to get into some kind of trouble at
9 school or whatever. Maybe it's only a possibility, but
10 would you take the possibility with your daughter?

11 MR. BERFIELD: That's not even a good question
12 with my daughter.

13 MR. MAYER: Well.

14 MR. BERFIELD: Just a couple of questions and then
15 I'll leave.

16 You had mentioned the possibility of a safe haven
17 for counseling or something like this. And this is one
18 of the questions that I asked several of the previous
19 witnesses, you know, where did they feel that they could
20 go in the city to feel safe. Most of the answers that
21 I recall writing down that, mentally, they felt they couldn't go
22 anywhere.

23 MR. MAYER: Well, they're supposed to feel that way.

24 So, I mean, if this is the mecca for the most

1 advanced technology on the planet for all of the birds
2 in flight, then, where else could you go? And that's the
3 whole point that I'm trying to bring about.

4 You are supposed to be at the only place you can
5 go for help in the whole world, in the universe for that
6 matter. And all the rest of you guys are gadabouts.
7 You're just simple, everyday, garden variety humanoids,
8 and you haven't got what it takes to do the job. And
9 that's the attitude that Scientologists come here with.
10 You are the enemy. We're the oriental gentlemen, WOGS.

11 I don't particularly feel that way, but, when I
12 was in Scientology, I treated you like that and got
13 commendations for it.

14 MR. BERFIELD: I have just one parting comment -
15 and I don't know if you had it written down or it's off
16 the top of your head there - that -- and I couldn't take
17 it down fast enough. That was: That you had trained all
18 of these people to commit all these acts and you were con-
19 cerned about the people of Clearwater.

20 MR. MAYER: The people of Clearwater?

21 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

22 MR. MAYER: I think the people of Clearwater can
23 deal with Scientology for a long time. How effective you
24 are at it, I have no -- I'm trying to give you suggestions

1 about it.

2 But understand, when I left Scientology, I left
3 eight years of friendships, people that I love and
4 respect, who, I know, came into the Church of Scientology
5 with good intentions: to do something constructive for
6 mankind, for the communities that exist or that they were
7 a part of for their friends and their families, and they
8 have been sold down the tubes.

9 I can't talk to people that I dearly love now
10 because they're still in Scientology. If I got anywhere
11 near any one of them, I'd have more Guardian's Office
12 staff members around me than Carter's have liver pills.
13 They are forbidden to communicate with me.

14 And I don't know how long I've got to sit and take
15 that kind of crap. I think I'm done with it. I may have
16 to continue on and go through more hearings and stuff
17 like that, but sooner or later people that I know and
18 love - and who, in turn, love me and respect me that are
19 in the Church - are going to graduate from Scientology.
20 If I've done anything to help that along, that's what I'm
21 here for.

22 MR. BERFIELD: Would you - and this is it - would
23 you say that the health, the safety, and the welfare of
24 the people in Scientology -- that their health or their

1 safety or their welfare is at risk or in danger?

2 MR. MAYER: They're ill-fed; they're ill-housed;
3 they're ill-clothed; they get horrible dental care; they
4 get horrible care for their children.

5 I have a personal friend who was left in the middle
6 of one of their Scientology drug rundowns incomplete and
7 committed suicide a couple of weeks before I could get
8 to him in Hawaii. Lavonne Jentz, who is no longer with
9 us, was a very, very close friend of mine. In fact, part
10 of the problem I got into with the Flag people was I was
11 trying to go to her office and be in her office. She's
12 dead now because she depended on Scientology technology
13 to cure a tumor. I can't ever talk to that woman again.
14 She's dead because she went to a Scientologist instead of
15 a doctor.

16 If that doesn't indicate danger, I don't know what
17 does.

18 MR. BERFIELD: Thank you, Mr. Mayer, very much.

19 MR. LeCHER: I just have two quickies.

20 You mentioned Marty Greenberg. Does Marty Green-
21 berg keep and maintain an accurate list of the income data
22 of the organization?

23 MR. MAYER: I couldn't answer that question. I
24 don't know the extent of the files that the Church keeps

1 in LA at this point in time; that's been too many years.

2 MR. LeCHER: But if you take in all this money and
3 you put it in one big hat, somebody must know where the
4 records are, even though they may not be records that you
5 and I would recognize from Accounting I, accounting
6 principles.

7 MR. MAYER: I'm sorry. I don't --

8 MR. LeCHER: Somebody must maintain records, some
9 sort of records; they may not be recognized standard
10 accounting principles.

11 MRS. GARVEY: Of how much money is in --

12 MR. MAYER: Well, all of the organizations would
13 have, in their treasury -- you know, they would have
14 invoices, their copies of invoices. Remember I told
15 you --

16 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

17 MR. MAYER: -- it's like a five-part form? They
18 would have their copies and stuff, all right?

19 Now, they might be ordered to send all of those
20 copies to Flag or to a -- like they did in the early
21 sixties and change all of those records -- or in the late
22 sixties, they changed those records.

23 I mean, how hard is it to take out a week's worth
24 of invoices and put in another set, when you've got a

1 nine dollar and fifty cent a week labor cost?

2 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

3 Within the organization, do you think that they
4 would ever disown Mrs. Hubbard and the other eight or
5 nine that were convicted?

6 MR. MAYER: Well, you want my personal --

7 MR. LeCHER: Well, that's why I asked the question.

8 MR. MAYER: I believe it depends on how well
9 they've gone about disappearing the money that everybody's
10 suing for now. In other words, I firmly believe that, if
11 it was for the best interest of the top management of
12 Scientology to disconnect - if Scientology could dis-
13 establish - they'd do it in an instant.

14 I don't think for a moment that they would stop
15 operations. You might not have the Church of Scientology,
16 but there would be something else. And then, again,
17 there have been an awful lot of government agencies for
18 a lot of years trying to nail them down and haven't done
19 a very good job of it. So, how long do you think it's
20 going to go on? It's anybody's guess.

21 I know they've been taking ten percent of the organ-
22 ization's income for many, many years and putting it in
23 the Guardian's Defense Fund, specifically, to handle all
24 this kind of stuff.

1 MR. LeCHER: Can Scientology exist without
2 deception and fraud --

3 MR. MAYER: I don't know how --

4 MR. LeCHER: -- as a viable organization?

5 MR. MAYER: -- because it couldn't compete in the
6 rest of the mental health community.

7 MR. LeCHER: That's a good answer.

8 One final one: What would you compare this organi-
9 zation to?

10 MR. MAYER: I think it's -- I think it's -- you
11 have to realize something: My father operated in the
12 intelligence community. I have told him stories that,
13 when I first started getting the heavy training, he was
14 just -- I mean, he was shocked at what I was -- how I was
15 being trained. We would sit down and go over how those
16 techniques were the same -- my father did security for
17 the Nuremburg trials, so he's no slouch. You know, he
18 was an intelligence advisor to the Joint Chiefs of Staff
19 at the Pentagon.

20 I have never had any problem asking him questions
21 about whether or not this was intelligence technique and
22 getting an answer out of him. He wrote some of the
23 training manuals, all right?

24 So, you are dealing with an organization that has

1 taken the most effective techniques of all the intelli-
2 gence services, not only taken those techniques and used
3 them to train their own personnel but, then, taking those
4 personnel and putting them into those organizations as
5 operatives.

6 I've heard, for instance, Artie Maren brag about
7 people in congressmen's offices that called up and
8 reported to the Guardian's Office on a daily basis. These
9 are secretaries who do this. I personally know a couple
10 of ladies from Vermont that were on a senator's line that
11 routinely gave information to the Guardian's Office.

12 So, they're much more effective in most cases
13 because of the fact that they operate under the illusion
14 of a religion, so you can't touch them.

15 MR. LeCHER: We can't talk about that, either.

16 MR. MAYER: Exactly. That's my point.

17 MR. LeCHER: That's right.

18 Thank you very much. You're a very bright, articu-
19 late man.

20 MR. HATCHETT: I have a --

21 MR. LeCHER: All right.

22 One quickie. Mr. Hatchett would like to ask you
23 about one --

24 MR. HATCHETT: Mr. Mayer, I purposely left this

1 question until the end.

2 As I observe the Fort Harrison operation and some
3 people going back and forth, I don't see what I physically
4 would call the minorities, you know, in the Church of
5 Scientology. I want to know about the Clearwater opera-
6 tion outside, you know, what I observe. Can you account
7 for this reason in any way?

8 We thought that they were streetwise - and we
9 defined that one time --

10 MR. MAYER: I know what street -- I was born in
11 Chicago.

12 MR. HATCHETT: All right.

13 Can you --

14 MR. MAYER: I went to school through -- I fought
15 my way to school through your neighborhood.

16 MR. HATCHETT: All right.

17 MR. MAYER: I know what streetwise is.

18 MR. HATCHETT: All right.

19 MR. LeCHER: Why did --

20 MR. MAYER: I think you're probably quite right.
21 I don't know of an awful lot of black people and minority
22 people in Scientology. I don't know what the statistics
23 are, certainly, over the last six years, but there were
24 very few when I was involved with the Church.

1 MR. HATCHETT: See, the thing about the low wages,
2 you know, you're talking about a labor force, we've been
3 accustomed to that for years and years.

4 MR. MAYER: And it pays less than unemployment.

5 MR. HATCHETT: Right.

6 MR. LeCHER: We want to thank you --

7 MR. HATCHETT: We just don't go for that --

8 MR. LeCHER: -- for being a good witness and being
9 very articulate, and you have a very engaging personal-
10 ity and you've --

11 MR. MAYER: Thank you.

12 MR. LeCHER: -- shed a lot of light on the issues..

13 We have four more witnesses to see in the next
14 two hours, so let's take a little quick break and then
15 we'll come back and run right through it.

16 (Whereupon, a recess was taken.)

17 (Whereupon the hearing resumed.)

18 MR. LeCHER: Well, we are waiting for the -- Mr.
19 Hatchett and Mr. Calderbank. Mr. Hatchett is here.

20 Mr. Calderbank, are you out there?

21 All right.

22 Ladies and gentlemen, please take your seats. The
23 officer will close the door.

24 We have had a very interesting four days. We want

1 to conclude by six, ladies and gentlemen. We have four
2 more witnesses. I ask that the Commission, and that
3 includes myself, will not be repetitive in questions.

4 So, we will go immediately to Mr. Flynn and his
5 next witness.

6 MR. FLYNN: Okay.

7 First, I'm going to read quickly an affidavit, just
8 on a corroborative point, and read it into the record and
9 it will be marked as an exhibit, the next exhibit. It's
10 an Affidavit of Stan Herrin.

11 "I, Stan Herrin, reside with my wife, Annette
12 Herrin, in Las Vegas, Nevada. I was involved with the
13 Church of Scientology from the summer of 1972 through
14 1978.

15 "During the time I was a member of the Church in
16 Las Vegas, Nevada, I had gone on board L. Ron Hubbard's,
17 the leader of Scientology, ship, the Apollo. I paid more
18 than thirteen thousand dollars to Scientology. I paid
19 this money to L. Ron Hubbard and Scientology after being
20 told by Church members and reading L. Ron Hubbard's books
21 representations concerning L. Ron Hubbard's background
22 and the benefits of Scientology.

23 "Some of the benefits I was promised in Scientology
24 included a higher IQ, faster reaction time, total recall,

1 complete physical health, and perfect thinking. I was
2 told L. Ron Hubbard researched, discovered, and developed
3 cures for illnesses using the technology of Scientology.
4 I was told L. Ron Hubbard was a nuclear physicist, he
5 had graduated from the finest institutions in the United
6 States: Princeton University and George Washington
7 University. I was told that L. Ron Hubbard was one of
8 the most decorated heroes of World War II, he was a world
9 traveller, a discoverer of far off cultures, and was able
10 to heal himself after being crippled and blinded from a
11 wound received in battle in World War II.

12 "While in Scientology, I joined a force known as
13 the Sea Org. The Sea Org. works to carry out Hubbard's
14 orders from aboard the ship, Apollo. While on board
15 Hubbard's ship, the Apollo, I was trained as a Finance
16 Banking Officer for the organization. As the Finance
17 Banking Officer, I was familiar with the gross income
18 of the Scientology orgs. Orgs. were required to file
19 weekly reports to Church headquarters and to L. Ron
20 Hubbard. At one point, I was responsible for insuring
21 at least ten percent of funds from a particular Scien-
22 tology org. was sent to Hubbard.

23 "One primary task I had while on board the Apollo
24 concerned accompanying George Beasley, the head Flag

1 Finance Banking Officer, as a courier for L. Ron Hubbard
2 of huge sums of cash in bank-wrapped bundles and carried
3 in a briefcase to the ship from banks on shore. George
4 Beasley told me that Hubbard had accounts in Switzerland
5 and Africa. He told me the money was from funds sent to
6 the Operation Transport Corporation and then, subsequent-
7 ly, transferred to numbered accounts in Switzerland and
8 Africa.

9 "Conditions on board the ship were extremely harsh;
10 sleeping quarters were dark, damp, and crowded. Only
11 thirty-second showers were allowed. Worst of all, any
12 person who disobeyed any of Hubbard's orders was placed
13 in the RPF, Rehabilitation Project Force. The Rehabilita-
14 tion Project Force was Hubbard's internal prison for those
15 Scientologists who disobeyed his orders. All mail to and
16 from the ship was censored for I was told ship's security.
17 During this time, I received only a couple of letters
18 my wife sent to me; she received only one of about six
19 I sent her. Hubbard ordered the censoring to prevent
20 Scientologists from writing and exposing facts about L.
21 Ron Hubbard's broken arm, colds, sicknesses, et cetera.

22 "Signed under the pains and penalties of perjury
23 this 27th day of April 1982, Stan Herrin."

24 (The Affidavit of Stan Herrin was

1 marked as Exhibit No. 47, as of this
2 date.)

3 MR. FLYNN: The next witness is an individual named
4 Robert Dardano, and he'll give a statement. And after
5 that, we'll read portions of the Affidavit of Tonja
6 Burden.

7 MR. LeCHER: Would you have Mr. Dardano sworn in,
8 please.

9 Madame Clerk, swear the witness.

10
11 ROBERT DARDANO, a witness herein,
12 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
13 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

14 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Dardano, I want to ask you the
15 same five questions: Are you appearing here today and
16 testifying under oath voluntarily?

17 MR. DARDANO: Yes, I am.

18 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
19 testimony, other than expenses for coming to the City
20 of Clearwater?

21 MR. DARDANO: No, sir.

22 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
23 Church of Scientology?

24 MR. DARDANO: No.

1 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have
2 a lawsuit against you?

3 MR. DARDANO: No, sir.

4 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
5 should state anything but the truth or has anyone
6 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

7 MR. DARDANO: No.

8 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

9 Proceed however you want. Do you have a statement
10 to read or do you have an outline or whatever?

11 MR. DARDANO: I'm working from an outline.

12 I became a member of the Church of Scientology in
13 '71, and was on staff as a staff member from '71 to '73.
14 In '73, I left the Church because of family problems.
15 And my mother had attacked the Church through the Better
16 Business Bureau, so I was immediately taken off staff
17 because of her legal threat to the Church.

18 During the summer of '73, I was working in
19 Worcester, and I was shortly -- in August of '73, I was
20 contacted by a member of the Guardian's Office and asked
21 to do covert data collections.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you say "overt" or "covert"?

23 MR. DARDANO: Covert.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: Covert.

1 MR. DARDANO: This was happening in Boston, Massa-
2 chusetts.

3 The group that I joined was seven people. We were
4 all assigned -- we all got our orders from the Boston
5 Church, directly from the Guardian's Office. And we had
6 people in the Boston Public Library that would collect
7 information and data on individuals that were attacking
8 the Church. That would be the overt data collections.

9 The covert data collections consisted of doing
10 surveillances on people, such as newspaper reporters,
11 other individuals that were attacking the Church at the
12 time.

13 The covert data collections had made placements in
14 various government offices, such as the Attorney General's
15 Office, the Better Business Bureau, the Consumer's
16 Council, and the Law Assistance -- LEAA, Law Assistance --
17 Law Enforcement Assistance Association.

18 During the year that we operated together, we were
19 able to pull off quite a few operations on different
20 people; some of them were successful. One of the more
21 successful operations was stealing Paulette Cooper's
22 medical files from her doctor's office in Belmont, Massa-
23 chusetts.

24 Along with this, we also were to -- were able to

1 interrupt the correspondence between the Boston Globe
2 and the attorney's office. The law office was Bingham,
3 Dana & Gould, and we placed an agent in the building to
4 clean the law offices at night, and he was able to review
5 the files daily to see what correspondence was going on
6 between the Globe and the Scientologists. That was 1974.

7 We also worked with letter-writing campaigns to
8 smear people, individuals, who worked on Project Freak-
9 Out, Operation Snow White. This was some of the pro-
10 grams given to -- the programs that were national and
11 worldwide programs developed by the Guardian's Office
12 for the protection of Scientology.

13 Paulette Cooper's file was -- we were able to find
14 out what doctors she was seeing and locate the office
15 that the files were in, and it was just a matter of walk-
16 ing in, taking it, xeroxing it, and bringing it back in,
17 putting it back in the file. There was a mistake made
18 that we kept the file out of the office for a longer
19 length of time than we should have. Other than that,
20 the file probably would have never been missed.

21 The group of people that I was with -- there were
22 seven people; and we rented a house about thirty miles
23 north of Boston. We operated like a -- like the Church
24 would operate under the Church policies. Our deadline --

1 our week ended on Thursday at two o'clock, as the Church
2 did. We all kept statistics on particular products that
3 we were supposed to produce. Our products were connec-
4 tions and instances.

5 For instance, if there was someone who was attacking
6 the Church, we would try and find as many connections
7 they had to other individuals, other groups, what they did
8 on a daily basis. And those would all be counted as
9 statistics and sent, first, into Boston and then up
10 lines, eventually, to Flag.

11 The file was -- Paulette Cooper's file was stolen
12 on a Saturday afternoon. It was just a matter of driving
13 down to the office. A couple of people got out of the
14 van, went into the office. They were able to jump over
15 a small partition wall and get into the office and look
16 her name up in the file, pull the file, and just walk out
17 of the building. There was no great security.

18 Most of the files and most of -- in fact, just
19 being in these offices, it's very easy to pull anything
20 you want out of this office. It's security -- people
21 don't realize what Scientologists are after or why they
22 may be after it in the first place. And it's very easy
23 just to walk into most places and get any information that
24 they want because it's not considered valuable and it's

1 not very well protected.

2 David Grace was the agent who was placed at the
3 cleaning company at the lawyers' -- the Boston lawyers'
4 office. He was in the lawyers' office at Bingham, Dana &
5 Gould, and he was able to go in the file, take the
6 information that he wanted, use their Xerox machine,
7 xerox it, bring it back in the morning, and we could
8 send it up lines to the GO in the Boston Church.

9 Any money that we needed for things that needed to
10 be done, such as xeroxing or traveling expenses, the
11 Church would give us to use what we had to.

12 The people that were in the Better Business Bureau
13 would interrupt complaints coming from public people
14 about the Church. And, basically, it was turned right
15 around and sent right back to the public with no satis-
16 faction, although the public felt they were being satis-
17 fied because they had reached someone in the Better
18 Business Bureau.

19 The Attorney General's Office agent was -- he had
20 uncovered a couple of attacks coming from public people.
21 And his cover was finally blown by the fact that he
22 requested information on the Church from the Justice
23 Department. This -- Mr. Mayer mentioned Bill Foster's
24 name before. Bill Foster was the head of this -- he was

1 the captain of this particular group, and he had been
2 there since 1971. He was operating the overt data/covert
3 data collections from '71 to '76 in Boston. And it.
4 wasn't until George Bristol's cover was blown at the
5 Attorney General's Office that the line was disbanded
6 and the group of seven people were sent to different
7 parts of the country.

8 Nancy and Bill Foster went to New York; George
9 Bristol went to Canada; two other people went out to
10 California; and a couple of others, David Grace and his
11 wife, Nancy Grace, went to the Sea Org. in LA. So, the
12 Church has just an ability to move people around very
13 quickly to get them out of sight.

14 We used code names and our reports were written
15 in code names, normally. It could have been at the point
16 where we were or where we were coming from.

17 The letters that were written in the smear cam-
18 paigns -- the typewriters were stolen and usually used
19 just for a short time and then the typewriters were
20 destroyed and new typewriters were gotten. Everything
21 was done with plastic gloves so that there wouldn't be
22 any fingerprints or things like this.

23 My position on the line was -- initially, it was --
24 I was the head of the overt data collections and I

1 handled, roughly, five people in the Boston Public
2 Library. We'd use all different sources to gather infor-
3 mation on public officials, senators, whoever the Church --
4 we would get a list from the GO's office of who we had
5 to investigate that particular week, and we would go ahead
6 and get as much information as we could on those people.

7 Shortly after that, the rest of the people in overt
8 data collections understood the -- what they were doing,
9 so I was able to train someone and they took over that
10 particular post. And I moved into covert data collec-
11 tions.

12 From the covert data collections -- this is where
13 I would handle people like George Bristol, who was in
14 the Attorney General's Office, Nancy Foster, Consumer
15 Affairs, Nancy Grace was in the Better Business Bureau.
16 And each week these people would file reports of what
17 went on on a daily basis in each one of these offices.

18 The -- it was very difficult for a public person in
19 Boston to make a complaint about the Church and have it
20 go anywhere. We had all the bases covered. They
21 couldn't -- if they called the Attorney General's Office,
22 George Bristol was sitting there and he's handling all
23 Scientology cases. So, it was just "Fine, ma'am, we'll
24 take care of it," and it wouldn't go anywhere from there.

1 Anything that was even a hint or a mention of Scien-
2 tology was brought out, as much information as -- we would
3 immediately look into that individual that brought up the
4 issue of Scientology and he was completely investigated
5 to find out what he did. We put people under surveillance
6 to find out where they were going and what they would do.

7 MR. FLYNN: Oh, incidentally, I think I said this
8 before, but it's rather an amusing anecdote from my point
9 of view: My old law firm was Bingham, Dana & Gould - and
10 it was burglarized, and my present law firm has just
11 surrendered some eight thousand documents to the same
12 organization.

13 MR. DARDANO: The one thing about Scientologists is
14 that they are there because they think they are buying
15 themselves spiritual freedom, and they are totally
16 committed to the organization and to their goals. It
17 takes an individual a long time after he's left the
18 Church to be able to have the freedom to believe that
19 he's going to be okay without Scientology.

20 You've got to -- as a Commission, you are going to
21 have a tough job in trying to decide what to do with
22 this group.

23 That's about all I have to say.

24 MR. LeCHER: In the interest of time, I'll only ask

1 you one question: Do you feel that there is now in the
2 City of Clearwater, or has there been, a smear or cover
3 up, either of any civil officials -- city officials or by
4 any city officials with respect to Scientology?

5 MR. DARDANO: A cover up by a city official or --

6 MR. LeCHER: By city or county or state or any
7 local officials, if you know of any?

8 MR. DARDANO: No, I don't know of anything like
9 that. But Scientology operates standardly with every
10 org. and every mission, and it's certainly going on; it's
11 just that it hasn't been uncovered.

12 MR. LeCHER: Well --

13 MR. DARDANO: There are probably undercover agents
14 here now from the Church.

15 MR. LeCHER: Since you had your -- you had every
16 act -- your act covered in Boston, I wonder if the act
17 is covered here, too.

18 MR. DARDANO: There's a good possibility, but it's
19 very hard to tell.

20 MR. LeCHER: I will -- again, because of time, I
21 will yield to the next Commissioner. Is that Mr.
22 Hatchett?

23 MR. HATCHETT: I haven't any questions.

24 MR. LeCHER: Do you have any questions, Mr.

1 Shoemaker?

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Dardano, how did you leave
3 the -- or what made you decide to come to Florida to
4 testify?

5 MR. DARDANO: Well, I had been -- I have been in
6 contact with Mr. Flynn for almost two years now, so it
7 was just a matter of knowing that.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Why did he come to see -- why did
9 you go to see Mr. Flynn?

10 MR. DARDANO: I wanted some way out of the -- that
11 I was really trapped and not being able to live my life
12 freely the way that I had been before I got into Scien-
13 tology. You're brainwashed. A Scientologist is a person
14 that's been brainwashed.

15 It was very difficult to get back into the main-
16 stream of life, and there's usually a lot of things that
17 bother the individual just as far as our own personal
18 life is concerned.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did they attempt to use the informa-
20 tion that you were involved in covert activities against
21 you to try to keep you in the organization or to keep
22 you quiet or --

23 MR. DARDANO: No.

24 They -- I had to sign -- as all Scientologists, if

1 you're causing any sort of flap, you have to sign docu-
2 ments saying that you will not attack the Church in any
3 way.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Have they interfered since you've
5 left with your life in any way that you're aware of?

6 MR. DARDANO: No, not that I'm aware of.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: To be clear on this: What, in fact,
8 you're stating is that you have firsthand knowledge of
9 criminal activities occurring in the City of Boston
10 against various people; is that correct?

11 MR. DARDANO: Yes, sir, that's correct.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: And you -- so, you actually saw
13 it; it's not something that somebody told you about --

14 MR. DARDANO: We did it --

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- on that basis.

16 MR. DARDANO: -- as a group. We were a conspiracy
17 formed by the Church against the Boston Globe, the
18 Attorney General's Office, the Better Business Bureau.
19 We considered every -- anyone and everyone an enemy of
20 the Church. And Paulette Cooper.

21 Paulette Cooper was a major -- a major task to work
22 on for a long time. Beside -- just -- not just the fact
23 that we had stolen her medical files, but a lot of other
24 types of operations were done against Mrs. Cooper.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: You had indicated that the captain
2 of the group was Foster, Bill Foster --

3 MR. DARDANO: Yes.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- who had been alluded to earlier.
5 Who was over him?

6 MR. DARDANO: He was run by Deac Finn, who was
7 head of B 1, Bureau 1.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Bureau 1.

9 And could you explain what you know of Bureau 1 to
10 be?

11 MR. DARDANO: Right.

12 Bureau 1 is -- B 1, it's the collections -- the
13 Information Bureau of the Guardian's Office.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: And who was over that person?

15 MR. DARDANO: That would be the AG in Boston, the
16 Assistant Guardian.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: And do you know where they went
18 after they left Boston?

19 MR. DARDANO: The individuals?

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes.

21 MR. DARDANO: You're going to love this. Deac is
22 down here working in Florida. I don't -- he's not in
23 Clearwater, but he's within one of the missions close by.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: He's here in Florida --

1 MR. DARDANO: Yes.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- someplace?

3 MR. DARDANO: I believe he's working in the group
4 called WISE.

5 MR. BERFIELD: What was that name, again?

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: Called what?

7 MR. DARDANO: WISE.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Wise, W-i-s-e?

9 MR. CALDERBANK: That's a business, business
10 community of Scientologists.

11 MR. DARDANO: It's the World Institute of Scien-
12 tology Enterprises. It's a group that sells Scientology
13 technology to businessmen. You get the businessmen to
14 use Scientology data and technology in their business.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: Are you aware, Mr. Dardano, at
16 any time of confidential information from auditing files
17 or something such as that being used against individuals?

18 MR. DARDANO: Yes, I'm -- well, it's just the --
19 it's one of the major lies of Scientology. The auditing
20 files -- they're passed around the org. all the time. It
21 doesn't make any difference who you are. Just about any-
22 one can get information out of the auditing file.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you personally ever --

24 MR. DARDANO: And I --

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- see anyone else go in the file?

2 MR. DARDANO: No. I never had anything to do with
3 it.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

5 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

6 Mr. Calderbank, again, I'd like --

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Three brief questions.

8 Where did you learn your burglary skills?

9 MR. DARDANO: Mostly from books and practicing.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Where did you get the practice and
11 the books?

12 MR. DARDANO: Just around the house that we were
13 living in, the lock picking; we'd get practice lock pick-
14 ing.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: Scientology taught you and supplied
16 you with the information you needed to help train you?

17 MR. DARDANO: Yes, sir.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Is that a policy of the Church to
19 do that or --

20 MR. DARDANO: Yes, they're very specific: intelli-
21 gence packets that are -- intelligence are trained
22 specifically on how to do breaking and entering, how to
23 lock pick.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: And this is supported by the policy

1 of Scientology?

2 MR. DARDANO: Yes.

3 Nothing we did -- we had quite a few -- we would
4 go in and look for information under the guise of students
5 doing research or -- basically, lying to get information,
6 using cover stories to get information about people or
7 places.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Is this a policy that's done world-
9 wide in the Scientology organization or utilized world-
10 wide?

11 MR. DARDANO: Yes. It's done under the training of
12 Bureau 1 in the G -- in the Guardian's Office.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Any information or communication,
14 while you were in Boston engaged in these activities,
15 come from or go to Clearwater?

16 MR. DARDANO: Yes, it did because all -- Clearwater
17 is Flag, Flag Land Base.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: So, in --

19 MR. DARDANO: Virtually all information across the
20 planet comes to Clearwater.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: So, we control these type of
22 criminal activities all over the world from Flag here,
23 Clearwater?

24 MR. DARDANO: Yes, sir.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

2 The person that ran the criminal practices --
3 what's his name, Deac --

4 MR. DARDANO: Deac Finn.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: Deac Finn is now, to the best of
6 your knowledge, here in Clearwater in a local mission
7 running the WISE --

8 MR. DARDANO: WISE -- just -- I'm not sure what
9 city it is; it's not Clearwater.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: But it's in Florida somewhere?

11 MR. DARDANO: In Florida, somewhere within an hour
12 to an hour and-a-half from Clearwater.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: Working with W-I-S-E --

14 MR. DARDANO: Yes.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: -- which is selling Scientology
16 technology to private industries, private businesses?

17 MR. DARDANO: Yes.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: That's all.

19 MR. LeCHER: All right.

20 Mr. Berfield.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Just a couple of quick ones: You
22 said you had a lawsuit against the Scientologists?

23 MR. DARDANO: No, I don't --

24 MR. BERFIELD: Do they have one against you?

1 MR. DARDANO: No, sir.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Can you tell us just very briefly
3 what made you come down here today?

4 MR. DARDANO: Just for the fact that I know it's
5 important. Scientology has been putting the screws to a
6 lot of people for a long time. And I spent six years and
7 fifteen thousand dollars.

8 The kids -- the people that are being indoctrinated
9 into the Church are -- they're being duped into it. Most
10 of them are just swallowed up by the Church. They're not
11 allowed to think for themselves. You go into the Church
12 and you're immediately fed with L. Ron Hubbard's data.
13 You're not allowed to use any of your own information and
14 experiences to evaluate the present situation. You're
15 completely isolated from society.

16 You think you're doing the best thing in the world.
17 You think you're going to help the world. And you become
18 so dedicated and ingrained in the doctrine of L. Ron
19 Hubbard.

20 MR. BERFIELD: How would you describe the practice
21 of Scientology?

22 MR. DARDANO: How would I describe it?

23 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

24 Are they honest, deceptive --

1 MR. DARDANO: They're just -- money making; that's
2 all they want to do, just make a buck.

3 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

4 Mrs. Garvey, any questions?

5 MRS. GARVEY: Yes.

6 Just -- sir, why did you leave? What finally was
7 the break point?

8 MR. DARDANO: I was -- after the line was broken
9 up because of the out security and George Bristol's cover
10 being blown in the Attorney General's Office, I went down
11 to FOLO, Flag liaison office in New York. And I was
12 trained there for -- to become a missionary. But Deac
13 Finn and I had several personality conflicts. He had
14 called me back to Boston and I was security checked for
15 about six hours.

16 And after that -- security checking is -- it can
17 get pretty brutal at times, and I had just had enough and
18 decided to leave.

19 MRS. GARVEY: Why -- what was your justification
20 for your burglarizing and stealing of files?

21 MR. DARDANO: I thought Scientology was going to
22 save the planet and free the world and we were right and
23 everyone else was wrong.

24 MRS. GARVEY: Did you see -- did you receive

1 detailed reports that you had to follow on your --

2 MR. DARDANO: No. Our reports were all typed and
3 handwritten. We didn't receive any written information
4 from the higher sources. It was all given verbally or it
5 was given in written form, but all of the written form was
6 destroyed immediately after it was received.

7 MRS. GARVEY: That's it.

8 MR. LeCHER: One just quick question for the record:
9 You mentioned someone recruited you into the dirty tricks
10 movement from the Guardian's Office.

11 Would you like to give me that name of that person
12 who recruited you?

13 MR. DARDANO: Yes. It was Gary Brown.

14 MR. LeCHER: Gary?

15 MR. DARDANO: Gary --

16 MR. LeCHER: Gary Brown.

17 MR. DARDANO: -- Brown.

18 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

19 Again, because of the time constraints we're under,
20 we're going -- that's all the questions we have.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: I've got just one question.

22 So, your beliefs in Scientology, L. Ron Hubbard,
23 and the policies that come from that organization induced
24 you into criminal activities in Boston?

1 MR. DARDANO: Yes, sir.

2 Mr. Flynn has asked me to clarify: At the time that
3 I was involved in these activities, Flag was not located
4 at Clearwater; Flag was still on board the Apollo, because
5 these activities ended in -- well, as far as I was con-
6 cerned, they ended in early '76.

7 MR. LeCHER: Okay. Thank you very much.

8 MR. FLYNN: I'd like to see if we can clarify that
9 date.

10 What's your best memory as to when -- whatever your
11 best memory is --

12 MR. DARDANO: I believe it ended in 1976.

13 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

14 Do you have a witness, Mr. Flynn?

15 MR. FLYNN: I do. The next witness is going to
16 be Paulette Cooper.

17 I'd like to put a couple of documents quickly on
18 the overhead projector, if I could.

19 MR. LeCHER: How many documents do you have, Mr.
20 Flynn?

21 MR. FLYNN: We'll put --

22 MR. LeCHER: Approximately?

23 MR. FLYNN: We'll put about five or six on.

24 Kevin, why don't we start with Project Owl.

1 This -- in interest of time, we're going to really
2 narrow this down. We're going to put the entire exhibit
3 into evidence. Some of the exhibits involve the Ops
4 Checksheets on clay demoing things, like Mr. Mayer was
5 talking about: how they do it, the documents they have
6 to read. Some of the documents involve how to commit a
7 burglary, the various steps; discussions and lessons on
8 lock-picking devices, how to use them, with descriptions.

9 Some of the documents involve things like making
10 an evaluation of what has been a successful and an unsuc-
11 cessful action. And they include things like: burglar-
12 izing, larceny, smearing, covert third-partying, launching
13 anti-press campaigns, tracing individual reporters,
14 various types of harassment, and things like that.

15 It's a -- they're multi-page documents, and I'm
16 not sure we have the time to go into them. The Commission
17 will have them all at their disposal.

18 For instance, one of the documents is lists of
19 agencies across the country that the organization is going
20 to burglarize to steal documents from, and it contains
21 the name of just about every national agency that you
22 could probably think of.

23 The first exhibit on the projector is an operation
24 called Project Owl. And in that operation, I would refer

1 you to the second page -- well, you see under -- there's
2 an example up there, a major target. To handle the -- to
3 handle the attack being generated on Wise refund cycle,
4 both with Wise and his attorney and at the Suffolk County
5 DA's Office, and then it goes through various primary
6 targets. And there's names: "Deac, Gary B., Kathy B.,"
7 all of which the witness could give direct testimony on,
8 if we took the time.

9 If you go over to the second page, you'll see a
10 heading under "Vital Targets," and then going down to
11 "Operating Targets," you see: "ODC and time tracks done
12 on the following" - that's overt data collections -
13 "Stanley Cath, Attorney John Lynch, John Wise, John Wise's
14 father, Reverend Steves," and then there's some others
15 penciled in there, including "Thomas Dwyer," who happens
16 to be a colleague of mine from law school, who was then
17 in the Assistant District Attorney's Office.

18 Then, number two, you will see: "Obtain Cath's
19 files on" - then in parentheses - "(by FSM" - which is
20 field staff member - "or other means as appropriate)" -
21 of which there's been testimony - "a, John Wise, b, Scien-
22 tology." And Dr. Cath is a medical doctor from Boston
23 or Belmont, Massachusetts upon which Miss Cooper will
24 testify because it was her doctor. And then number c is:

1 "others as needed" - parentheses - "(including Paulette
2 Cooper material not previously obtained)," which would
3 suggest that they had already gone in before then.

4 "Cliff Stanton files, Cath personal files, material
5 on deprogramming, Mrs. Elaine Lieberman, Van Roeschmann,
6 International Foundation for Individual Freedom" - IFIT --
7 IFIF - "Return to Personal Choice, Dr. Taylor and Ted
8 Backer. Do.CDC" - that's covert data collections - "on
9 Cath for data on his book, fish for leads that Cath knows
10 Wise and/or Stanton, use Cath to establish lines to other
11 areas for CDC," et cetera.

12 What the Commission needs to be aware of in the con-
13 text of all of this information is that this is just one
14 project of which we're getting a little more specific.
15 And that entire project will go in as the next exhibit.

16 (A copy of Project Owl was marked
17 as Exhibit No. 48, as of this date.)

18 MR. FLYNN: Operation Freakout is a multi-page
19 exhibit, which the Commission can read with regard to
20 very specific instructions as to who was to do what in
21 order to carry out this operation, which -- the reading
22 of which is rather remarkable.

23 The first item of attention is -- under "Major
24 Target," right at the top, "To get PC incarcerated in a

1 mental institution or jail, or at least to hit her so hard
2 that she drops her attack."

3 I would suggest to you that the Project Owl was a
4 part of Freakout when they attempted to obtain Miss
5 Cooper's psychiatric files from Dr. Cath in order to put
6 her in a mental institution or in jail, of which she will
7 testify.

8 And I would also -- I would also direct the Commis-
9 sion's attention -- we'll have to go back to Owl and put
10 the last page of Owl on the transparency. And as you can
11 see, there's all kinds -- there's very specific instruc-
12 tions on what they do, when they do it, et cetera, et
13 cetera.

14 But going down to the bottom, you'll see a name
15 at the bottom, "Mike Cooper." Mike Cooper is Mitchell
16 Hermann, who is one of the individuals who has been con-
17 victed and is now in jail, and he was the Guardian of the
18 Southeast U.S. Sect, during this period of time, which
19 was Clearwater. And this particular project originated in
20 your city.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Mike, these people seem to have an
22 affinity for infiltrating district attorneys' offices.

23 Would you give any information or any documenta-
24 tion - I've seen some - as to the information or

1 infiltration that was either gained or the office infil-
2 trated for our State Attorney General, Mr. Russell, or for
3 the local office? Was it ever targeted, or do you have
4 documentation to that effect, Clearwater documents?

5 MR. FLYNN: Yes. There -- as I said, we've got a
6 whole separate package just on Clearwater, which is two or
7 three inches thick, which is, I would suggest to you, just
8 a mere sampling of some of the documents. All of the Red
9 Box data was never received. Another seventy or eighty
10 thousand documents are up in the Clerk's Office in Wash-
11 ington, D.C. under seal. These documents are not under
12 seal. And the documents that have been under seal have never
13 been viewed by my office - and I don't know who else
14 they've been viewed by - but I would suggest that there
15 may be other documents pertaining to Clearwater.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: I'd just like the people to know
17 that our DA offices, also, are a target - or at least in
18 a document - a projected target for infiltration.

19 MR. FLYNN: Oh, yes. The exhibits that are in the
20 Clearwater packet start right at the beginning with
21 Operation Normandy to take over the City of Clearwater,
22 outlining all of the offices that are going to be infil-
23 trated and documents are going to be stolen from, people
24 are going to be planted in. There's probably thirty or

1 thirty-five such offices. We'll reach that at another
2 point in time. But they're all laid out very clearly in
3 Operation Normandy. And you might remember that Normandy
4 was a beachhead for -- in World War II, and Clearwater
5 was a beachhead for Mr. Hubbard.

6 Okay. We'll now go forward with Paulette Cooper.

7 I will have these other documents marked on how to
8 commit burglaries, evaluations of which types of covert
9 operations are successful and unsuccessful, as well as
10 the drills that one goes through, such as Mr. Mayer, Mr.
11 Dardano, Mrs. Peterson, Mr. Walters, and others have
12 described as to how you're trained to do very specific
13 things.

14 (A copy of Operation Freakout was
15 marked as Exhibit No. 49, as of
this date;

16 Documents on how to commit burglar-
17 ies, evaluations of covert opera-
tions, and drills were marked as
18 Exhibit Nos. 50, 51, and 52, as of
this date.)

19 MR. LeCHER: Would you like to call your next
20 witness, now?

21 MR. FLYNN: Miss Cooper, please.

22 MR. LeCHER: Miss Cooper, will you be sworn in,
23 please?
24

1 PAULETTE COOPER, a witness herein,
2 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
3 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

4 MR. LeCHER: Miss Cooper, are you appearing here
5 today and testifying under oath voluntarily?

6 MS. COOPER: Yes.

7 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
8 testimony, other than the expenses for coming to the
9 City of Clearwater?

10 MS. COOPER: No.

11 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
12 Church of Scientology?

13 MS. COOPER: Yes.

14 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have a
15 lawsuit against you?

16 MS. COOPER: Yes.

17 MR. LeCHER: How many, eighteen?

18 MR. FLYNN: And for the record, the Commissioners
19 may remember that one of the earlier exhibits on the
20 purpose of a lawsuit, which was read, to harass and
21 discourage and to destroy the person.

22 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
23 should state anything but the truth or has anyone
24 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

1 MS. COOPER: No.

2 MR. LeCHER: How do you defend yourself against
3 eighteen lawsuits?

4 MS. COOPER: I work day and night to support the
5 lawyers.

6 MR. LeCHER: I don't know how you could simply
7 afford it.

8 MS. COOPER: I figured out just recently that it's
9 cost over fifty thousand dollars for legal fees on the
10 suits.

11 MR. FLYNN: For the record, I haven't received any
12 of that.

13 MR. LeCHER: Start at the beginning, please.

14 MS. COOPER: Okay.

15 I'm a freelance writer; I live in Manhattan. I'm
16 the author of several hundred articles, two of which are
17 about Scientology; I'm also the author of six books, one
18 of which is The Scandal of Scientology. I have been
19 studying Scientology since 1968.

20 The last couple of years, the Scientologists --

21 MR. LeCHER: I don't think they can hear you, Miss
22 Cooper, in the back of the room.

23 MS. COOPER: Okay.

24 The last couple of years, the Scientologists have

1 been telling the people of Clearwater that they've
2 changed and they've advanced a lot in the last couple of
3 years. I certainly haven't noticed it. As I said, the
4 eighteenth lawsuit was just served on me last week.

5 I am being sued now repeatedly by individual
6 Scientologists, who, in some cases, I don't even know,
7 suits for supposedly distributing literature at functions
8 I didn't even attend.

9 Part of the purpose in harassing people with law-
10 suits is to keep deposing them and preventing you from
11 writing or making a living and making you show up at
12 legal depositions. I've been deposed for nineteen days
13 total since this started, with four more coming up in
14 a couple of weeks.

15 There has also been some other harassment in the
16 past six months or so: continued calls to me, calls to
17 my family. The Scientologists find out what the person's
18 buttons are, as they put it, and the way to get to them.
19 And they know that a way to get me is to harass my
20 parents. So, they have been under a great deal of
21 harassment, as well as my harassment.

22 They've put out libelous publications about me;
23 they've sent letters saying that I was soon to be
24 imprisoned. And you saw the Operation Freakout and

1 attempts that have been made to put me in prison. They've
2 sent false reports about me to the Justice Department,
3 the District Attorney's Office, the IRS. As you know,
4 government agencies have to investigate any complaints
5 that they get. So, then, Scientology sends out press
6 releases that I am under investigation by the Attorney
7 General's Office, I am under investigation by the DA, and
8 so on.

9 They have put detectives on me; they have put spies
10 on me. A few months ago, they put an attempted spy on
11 my mother to try to get information about me from her and
12 to fix me up with the woman's son, so they could get
13 direct to me. They cancelled my plane to -- well, some-
14 body cancelled my plane to Florida about a month ago, and
15 that is the third time that happened to me this year
16 while I was traveling.

17 I'd like to say that this was a very good year
18 compared to the previous years. And I'd like to discuss
19 a little bit what it was like to fight Scientology alone,
20 starting in 1968, because I was the only one who was
21 speaking out. This is a wonderful thing that there are
22 people speaking out now. But when I started, absolutely
23 nobody else did it. And I was the only person until --
24 from 1968 until 1973.

1 In 1973, Nan McLean joined, and the two of us
2 spoke out publically. And then in 1976, Gabe Cazares
3 joined, and there were the three of us.

4 When I started in 1968, there was no support from
5 the press, there were no rallies, there were no grand
6 juries looking into Scientology, there were no lawyers
7 like Mike, Mr. Flynn. There was no peer acceptance
8 about what you were doing; there was just no understand-
9 ing that anything was wrong. It was somewhat like a
10 social group that people were joining and it had a
11 veneer that everything was going along well, although,
12 based on the testimony you've had here, you know, these
13 dirty tricks were going on. But if I said that they
14 were, people thought that I was the one that was making
15 these things up about them.

16 I'd like to give a little background as to how I
17 got interested in the subject. I never was a Scientolo-
18 gist. My basic interest is as a writer; I like investi-
19 gative things. In addition, I have a Master's Degree
20 in Psychology, and I studied Comparative Religion at
21 Harvard for a summer.

22 A friend of mine, in 1968, joined Scientology and
23 he ended up in a mental institution. I'm not saying that
24 one caused the other, but it certainly peaked my curiosity.

1 When he escaped, he came to visit me and he told me that
2 he was Jesus Christ. I then had --

3 MR. BERFIELD: He was who?

4 MS. COOPER: Jesus Christ. And he'd been a pretty
5 normal person before then.

6 I then called our mutual friend who had gotten him
7 in and said, "He thinks he's Christ." And my friend said,
8 "Well, he really is." So, I thought, "Well, this bears
9 some investigation."

10 I went in and took their weekend course. During
11 the time, I wandered away from the group where they were
12 teaching the particular, well, TRs, as they call them,
13 and I came upon a list of people, who -- I don't remember
14 for sure if it was a Fair Game Order, but I think it was,
15 because these people were being declared enemies of man-
16 kind. And it was very odd terminology. I remember one
17 woman's name was on there and it declared her enemy of
18 mankind for pushing five men down a flight of stairs.
19 And what -- how could she do that? It just didn't ring
20 like true.

21 And I decided to contact some of these people when
22 I came home. And I think I took about five names, the
23 five top people, and every one of them had an unlisted
24 number, disconnected phone. Well, this is 1968, and the

1 people it was attracting were twenty-two, twenty-three
2 years old. And just by chance, a whole group of people
3 are not going to have five unlisted numbers unless
4 there's a reason for people to unlist their number.

5 So, it began to bother me that, you know, was
6 this so-called respectable Church perhaps harassing
7 people? And in that one weekend, I had noted that they
8 had lied about certain things, and I wondered about a
9 church lying to people. And I decided to look in the
10 library and see if I could get any information, any book.
11 And I discovered that all the stories had been clipped
12 out of every single magazine pertaining to Scientology,
13 and I wondered whether this Church was, perhaps, possibly
14 stealing things.

15 Well, I spent the next couple of years doing
16 research into Scientology. And my first article came
17 out in December of 1969. That's also the month that I
18 received my first death threat. And then a number of
19 mysterious events occurred, both then and during the time
20 within the next year and-a-half until my book came out.
21 I was followed on several occasions; we found a phone tap
22 on my phone; I was being multiply sued already at that
23 time. A number of -- oh, people kept calling me and
24 trying to take me out, and it seemed like people were

1 trying to get to me.

2 And this went on for four unpleasant years, includ-
3 ing four lawsuits, one of which was for somebody else's
4 book. And when that happened, I got really annoyed. And
5 I became the first person to sue them for harassment,
6 and this was actually shocking to them because Hubbard
7 had written that an enemy of -- that no one would ever
8 sue Scientology, that they had too much to hide and that
9 the people were criminals whoever attacked the Church,
10 and, therefore, we were going to just wither away and die.

11 So, they then decided - as we know later and I'm
12 going to discuss this later - at that time that they were
13 out to get me and they would have to silence me because,
14 after my book came out, I began to receive very, very
15 disturbing calls. And the type of things that you've
16 been hearing for the last few days were the type of
17 things that people would call and tell me what -- mysteri-
18 ous things happening to them, that -- all kinds of very
19 unpleasant things. And that everybody had a sort of
20 paranoid feeling and they were afraid to speak out; people
21 were very afraid to speak out. And yet, when enough
22 people who don't know each other tell you the same thing
23 happening to them, you begin to realize that something
24 is going on.

1 Well, about October of 1972, they started a big
2 campaign to finally silence me or attempt to stop me.
3 The -- that month I received the second of what was
4 ultimately to be five anonymous, absolutely disgusting
5 smear letters about me. This particular one called me
6 a part-time prostitute, and you can imagine how upsetting
7 it is to open up something like that and read it.

8 During this same period of time, there were a large
9 number of attempts to get into my apartment, which was
10 on the ground floor of the building that I lived in at
11 the time; it was not well guarded, and I was quite con-
12 cerned. I received a tremendous number of really dis-
13 gusting calls, and I remember one day counting eleven
14 calls.

15 Remember that I work as a freelance writer. That
16 means that if I get upsetting calls and I'm unhappy, it's
17 very hard to just pick up and to write what you were
18 working on. A lot of abusive calls then and over the
19 years, just the sort of -- you pick up the phone and
20 somebody says, "Oh, what are you doing?" And they'd
21 hang up and call back, so you have to take the phone off
22 the hook. And if you're trying to reach somebody, they
23 can't call you back.

24 Well, I finally decided that I was going to move to

1 a higher-security apartment, even though I really could
2 not afford to do so at the time. I moved on December
3 15th. On December -- the person who took over the
4 apartment was my second cousin. We bore a physical
5 resemblance, but -- basically, because we're about the
6 same age and she was very petite and we both had short,
7 brown hair at the time.

8 And a series of mysterious circumstances occurred.
9 The important thing was that she opened up the door to
10 someone who had flowers and rang my bell. And I was
11 no longer living there, although, my name was still on the
12 door. And so, Eddie Walters told you about R 245, and
13 you've heard the policy. When Joy opened the door to
14 get these flowers, he unwrapped the gun -- he unwrapped
15 the flowers and there was a gun in it. And he took the
16 gun and he put it at Joy's temple and he cocked the gun,
17 and we don't know whether it misfired, whether it was
18 empty and it was a scare technique, what happened, but,
19 somehow, the gun did not go off. And the -- he started
20 choking her, and she was able to break away and she
21 started to scream. And the person ran away.

22 And so, she called a detective and he said, "It's
23 a very wild attack because there doesn't seem to be any
24 motive for it." There was no attempted rape, there was

1 no attempted robbery, and why should somebody just
2 suddenly try to kill her.

3 The -- about a week or two later at my new apart-
4 ment, I received a visit from the FBI. And they informed
5 that the public relations person for Scientology had
6 claimed that she had received a couple of bomb threats
7 and asked -- and had named me as somebody likely to send
8 bomb threats. So, the -- I didn't take the whole thing
9 very seriously, and the FBI asked me if I would mind
10 being fingerprinted. And I said that I would not, and I
11 was fingerprinted.

12 At the same time my cousin Joy's boyfriend had been
13 very, very upset about what happened. And he said, "Boy,
14 you better let your Scientology spies know that you have
15 moved and where you are because I don't want anything to
16 happen to her again." And I did.

17 And shortly thereafter, in my -- to my new building,
18 half the tenants, which is approximately three hundred
19 tenants in the building, received a very, very disgusting
20 anonymous smear letter about me, trying to get me kicked
21 out of the apartment, and saying that I had venereal
22 disease, that I would sexually molest little children.
23 The only thing that was true in the letter was my age,
24 which was not something I wanted known anyway. And it

1 was very, very embarrassing. As I was walking through
2 the building -- and I've heard people talking about me
3 in the elevator, and I was just sort of slinking along
4 and I was really -- a month later my parents received an
5 anonymous smear letter about me, accusing me of prac-
6 ticing sexual perversions with their clergyman. These
7 were not very good months.

8 So -- and I was called for grand jury around this
9 time. At least, I didn't think this was anything very
10 serious and did not bother to retain a lawyer, had very
11 little money because I had used all my money to move to
12 this more expensive, higher-security apartment.

13 And when I got there, they told me that I was the
14 target of an investigation into the bomb threats. And I
15 went and had to hire a lawyer, and every lawyer wanted --
16 the least we could get was five thousand-dollar retainer,
17 which, in those years, was like paying ten thousand
18 dollars, you know, today. And to suddenly have to pay
19 this sum of money and find out that you're in serious
20 trouble, and no one would -- the government would not tell my
21 lawyers what the evidence was against me. They wouldn't
22 show me the letters.

23 Anyway, finally, I went before the grand jury, and
24 I tried to answer every question as truthfully as I could.

1 I never took the Fifth Amendment. And they kept asking
2 me again and again, "Did you ever see this letter? Did
3 you ever touch it? Do you know who might have?" And I
4 said, incidentally, "Yes," that I suspected they might
5 have sent it to themselves because we had some unpleasant
6 confrontations in the press.

7 And then they asked me to step outside the room.
8 And when I came in, I knew I was in very serious trouble,
9 and they asked me what my social security number was,
10 whether I was on drugs, and did I realize what I had said
11 so far. And again, they asked me the same series of
12 questions.

13 And then they said, "Well, Miss Cooper, if you've
14 never touched this letter before, could you tell us how
15 your fingerprints got on it?" And I felt like a grand
16 piano had just hit me on the head. I -- I fainted sitting
17 up; the whole room just turned upside down and I didn't
18 know what to do. And then, of course, the lawyers wanted
19 more money.

20 And on May -- let's see, May 19th, 1973, I was
21 indicted on the three counts of sending bomb threats
22 through the mail; two counts were for two letters. One
23 was for perjury for saying before the grand jury that I
24 hadn't done it and that I thought this public relations

1 person might have done it. On May 29th, ten days later,
2 I was arrested and I was arraigned.

3 The next eight months were a terrible, terrible
4 nightmare in my life that I still feel sometimes that I
5 suffer from to this day. I had fifteen years in jail
6 over my head and fifteen thousand dollars in fines. I
7 was petrified about going to jail, more so, perhaps,
8 because of my small frame and the fact that I heard that
9 women's federal prisons were rough places.

10 I risked having my career totally destroyed
11 because -- and I had been successful. And as an a free-
12 lance writer, what editor is ever going to give an assign-
13 ment to someone who's been indicted or convicted for
14 sending bomb threats to someone they opposed?

15 I was very concerned about the indictment and
16 the trial coming out in the newspapers. The public does
17 not know the difference between indict and convict, and
18 they think that if you're on trial for something, you must
19 have done it or where there's smoke, there's fire. I was
20 left with the terrible public humiliation that every
21 person I ever knew in New York would read the details of
22 the trial and these accusations.

23 I was most concerned about my parents, who had
24 adopted me when I was six years old, and how humiliating

1 it would be for them and their friends to have to explain
2 and to go through a trial like this.

3 During this period of time, I went through a
4 terrible, terrible depression and a number of my friends,
5 which I can't blame them for, did not stick by me. I
6 was depressing to be with. I had been seeing a man for
7 five years and had intended to marry him, and he left as
8 a result of my depression. I was released on my own
9 recognizance, but I was not allowed to leave the state.
10 And this made it difficult because I had friends in
11 Connecticut and in New Jersey, and it was just all I
12 could do to get away for a weekend. But it was so humili-
13 ating to have to go to the court and ask permission to go
14 twenty miles away that I couldn't do it.

15 I went through a period of very, very acute anxiety.
16 I would go to sleep -- I couldn't fall asleep till about
17 four in the morning and I'd wake up about six with my
18 stomach just in my throat and worrying about what the
19 next day would bring and what was going to happen at the
20 initial hearing. And this went on for eight months, and
21 I was just totally exhausted, sleeping two to four hours
22 a day. I couldn't drag myself around anymore.

23 All the money I had had gone to lawyers, and I went
24 into debt to try to continue to pay for them. The -- in

1 the end, just the main lawyers cost nineteen thousand
2 dollars.

3 I was totally unable to write during this period.
4 I was -- the depression was very, very bad and I couldn't
5 concentrate. I attempted to write, but it was really
6 very bad writing. And I stopped eating because I was
7 filled with such nausea and exhaustion. I tried to force
8 myself to have -- I took a sixteen ounce-glass of tomato
9 juice each day and two eggs. About half the time, I
10 would just eat it and then go to bathroom and throw it
11 up; I just couldn't hold food in my stomach.

12 Oh, a year earlier I had been operated on and a
13 lot of the -- I was physically ill as well during this
14 period. Mentally, I just totally fell apart about half
15 way through. I developed, for the first time in my life,
16 acute agoraphobia; I couldn't leave the house. I think
17 that this really started with this attempted murder that
18 I felt had been intended for me. But then, you have to
19 remember, I didn't want to walk around my building
20 because I was hearing people talking about the lady with
21 VD.

22 And I had been very concerned when they were going
23 to arrest me that they were going to arrest me in the
24 lobby of my building and humiliate me among my neighbors

1 further. So, this was the genesis of a sudden inability
2 to go out.

3 And some of my friends were very, very good. They
4 would come over and try to force me to get out and get
5 my mind off what was going on. It worked for a while.
6 Around September/October, it didn't work anymore. One
7 friend came over, alarmed that I had not left the house
8 for a week, and he said, "You've got to walk around the
9 block." And I remember we stepped outside about two or
10 three steps and I just started crying and I said, "Don't
11 make me. I can't do it; I just can't do it." And then
12 I went home and I stayed inside for about two more weeks.

13 And meanwhile, during this period of time, there
14 was a friend, a new friend, who I met under somewhat
15 mysterious circumstances, but he was very, very helpful.
16 And I obtained an apartment for him in my building, and
17 he did some of the food shopping that I could not get out
18 and do. And his name was Jerry Levin.

19 And everybody -- the worst period of time was
20 approximately two weeks before the trial. My lawyers
21 informed me that, with a federal case, it was a ninety-
22 five percent chance of conviction. They then gave me the
23 good news that, for the trial, they wanted my parents
24 to be seated in the front row and watch the entire

1 proceedings. And I kept saying, "You can't do that to
2 them. It's going to be awful enough for them to read
3 it in the paper." And they said, "You don't understand,
4 if you're parents don't show up, the jury doesn't
5 realize," you know, "that this is what you want. They're
6 just going to" -- they felt that the one circumstance
7 that might get me acquitted was the mutually close
8 relationship with my parents.

9 On top of that, going through some Scientology
10 material that I had obtained, there was the name of
11 Jerry Levin. Now, I felt horribly betrayed, but at the
12 same time I simply did not want to believe it. I was
13 very naive, and his name was a very common name,
14 especially, in a city like New York.

15 Meanwhile, we had tried every single move possible
16 to get the trial stopped. And -- but I was in a very,
17 very nervous state and it was impossible for me to be
18 tested correctly. And we went to some doctors who said
19 that they felt the only thing that might work would be
20 if I would go into a state where I didn't know what was
21 going on, meaning sodium pentothal or truth serum,
22 because to do that, you have to be -- you're unconscious;
23 it's like an operation.

24 So, the problem was we couldn't find a doctor who

1 would give me a sodium pentothal test because, by this
2 time, I weighed eighty-three pounds; I had started about
3 ninety-eight. And it became very, very dangerous to go
4 and put somebody under, as if for an operation, and do
5 that. And I just said I didn't care if the operation --
6 not the operation, but if the sodium pentothal killed
7 me because, if I had to stand trial for what I didn't do
8 and humiliate everyone and go through this humiliation,
9 that I would just as soon be dead anyway.

10 And we finally did find a doctor two weeks before
11 trial who gave me a sodium pentothal test. I was uncon-
12 scious for seven hours. I don't know what I said during
13 that. I do know that, when I came to, my mother was
14 standing there and I said, "What happened? What did I
15 say?" And she just said, "It's okay. It's all over.
16 There won't be a trial."

17 The government wanted to save face because they
18 don't like to admit that they've made a mistake. So, they
19 said that they wouldn't actually -- they would postpone
20 the trial, but they would not actually drop the charges
21 at that time. They also ordered me to see a psychiatrist
22 which I thought was very humiliating.

23 The government did not drop the charges and, for
24 two years after all this, I still had to worry on a daily

1 basis whether one day there was going to be a trial and
2 all of these things that I was afraid of, the prison and
3 so on, was going to happen.

4 The next year was 1974, and there were a number of
5 new lawsuits against me. Oh, continued harassments,
6 including harassments of my family and their clergyman,
7 new spies.. By the summer, which was about seven months
8 after the worst period of this whole thing, I remember
9 that one of my friends said that htat was the first time
10 he had seen me smile in a year and-a-half.

11 And so, I decided, in fact, that I was going to
12 try to get back this gentleman that I was interested in.
13 And I threw a birthday party to have an excuse to invite
14 him to something and I sent an invitation, and he then
15 wrote me the most incredible letter back. And what I
16 found out was that there was then a fifty anonymous smear
17 letter about me, this one sent to him and his bosses, and
18 he would never talk to me again; and he never has.

19 In 1975, the charges against me were finally
20 dropped. But during this period, they started a new type
21 of harassment. And then I began receiving things in the
22 mail, such as copies of -- I had kept a diary from when
23 I was seventeen to about twenty, and there was my diary
24 suddenly coming back to me, copies of letters that I had

1 sent out - or my carbon copy of it - and a psychiatrist's
2 report that Mr. Dardano explained that he stole.

3 In 1976, the charges were -- no, excuse me. In
4 late '75, the charges were finally dropped. At that
5 point some very bizarre things happened that, it wasn't
6 until later, I would learn were part of another attempt
7 to put me in jail. But -- for example, people were --
8 somebody was calling a number of my close friends, imi-
9 tating my voice to a degree that was good enough that
10 some people stopped talking to me, others called and
11 yelled at me: why should I have called and been so rude
12 and so on. And I said, "I didn't call." And then I
13 went to a writers' meeting and someone said, "Gee, how
14 was Washington?" I said, "I haven't been to Washington
15 in two years." They said, "You called from Washington."
16 I didn't understand at the time why these things were
17 being done.

18 Also, at a -- I was with a group of writers and
19 someone showed me a joke, and I realized afterwards that
20 it appeared to be an attempt to get my fingerprints again.
21 And I became very, very upset because, after all, I had
22 a, quote, record, end quote. And I was very concerned
23 about the possibility of more bomb threats.

24 In -- there were many, many more things that were

1 done to me over the years, but this is -- I'm trying to
2 summarize a little bit.

3 In December of 1976, I became very, very tired of
4 it all. By that time there were nine lawsuits against
5 me. Right before I went to court, all the stuff was
6 remailed to me that was mailed in the past, sort of a
7 subtle blackmail: "This is what's going to happen if you
8 don't settle." Scientology wanted me to settle quite
9 badly.

10 Also, they convinced me at that time that they
11 changed and that they really were a very nice organiza-
12 tion, and that, by my continued statements and stance
13 against them and my book, I was preventing them from doing
14 the good deeds that they wanted to do or that they were
15 doing by bringing up the bad things all the time. And
16 in December of '76, I agreed, in a sense, that -- it's
17 easier to just say that I agreed, in a sense, not to bad
18 mouth them and they agreed not to bad mouth me.

19 While they were telling me that they had changed,
20 unbeknownst to me, there was a man named Michael Meisner -
21 and he had been a top GO operative - and they were hold-
22 ing him under gag and handcuff. And this man knew that
23 I had been criminally framed and he knew about a lot of
24 things that had been going on.

1 In the summer of 1977, the FBI raided the three
2 Scientology organizations. On October 12th, 1977, the
3 FBI called me. Now, remember, this was a five-year
4 period that I had never been able to prove my innocence;
5 the government considered me a criminal; I had a, quote,
6 record, end quote. And the FBI called out of the blue
7 and said, "We have just received evidence that you were
8 innocent of this -- those original charges." And I hung
9 up the phone and cried and I, in fact, tried to reach
10 that person that was no longer talking to me, but he had
11 since remarried.

12 I worked with the FBI for the next couple of years.
13 I did learn before -- in the investigation that was going
14 on that the murder attempt on Joy was seemingly intended
15 for me by Scientology. I learned that they had broken --
16 Scientology had broken into my New York lawyer's office
17 and -- this was one of many lawyers to break into, but
18 that was the first one. And I learned, which was, to me,
19 the most important thing, that they had framed me in
20 1972.

21 And -- let me skip ahead a little bit to some of
22 the stuff that -- there were more lawsuits.

23 Anyway, at the end of 1979, I finally saw the
24 documents that had been seized. There were twenty-three

1 thousand documents. And there were documents -- I'm
2 sorry, twenty-three thousand that were available to the
3 public. And there were two documents that finally made
4 it very clear that I had been criminally framed, and it
5 was very important to me that, at last, I was publically
6 able to proclaim my innocence and not worry about the --
7 what anybody would say, and that I no longer -- I always
8 felt that I had to hide the fact that I had been arrested.
9 And if I would meet someone and if they had any political
10 ambitions, I wouldn't tell him why, but I would quickly
11 stop seeing him for his sake. So, it was something that
12 I was hiding, and it was affecting my life in various
13 ways.

14 We found one document that, apparently, indicated
15 that they were considering the use of the Mafia on me,
16 but that they decided instead to criminally frame me, so
17 that Scientology would not look bad. We found a document
18 that -- we found a number of documents that proved that
19 this fellow who had been helping me, I thought, during
20 the period that I was, oh, having such a bad time -- he
21 was calling a diary into Scientology as to what I was
22 doing, how close I was to suicide, and, you know, cheering
23 me on, like, you know: "She can't sleep again, that she
24 talking suicide. Wouldn't this be great for Scientology?"

1 It's very strange from reading the diary of somebody that
2 you think is a friend and is wishing you dead and working
3 in your behalf towards that direction.

4 Incidentally, this particular fellow, who's name was
5 Jerry Levin -- they changed his name to Don Alberto, and
6 he became one of the biggest dirty tricks operatives down
7 in Clearwater. He also was the person that was sent to
8 Washington and planted the bug in the IRS.

9 We saw a document called Operation Freakout, which
10 Mr. Flynn started to show you before. Remember, I men-
11 tioned these very bizarre phone calls, people posing as
12 me? We think that they were trying to test my voice
13 because, part of Operation Freakout -- Operation Freakout
14 consisted of six different ways to try to get me jailed
15 again, since the charges had been dropped. One of the
16 ways was to call in bomb threats in a voice that would
17 sound like mine; another was to write bomb threats very
18 similar to the original ones but pasted on Writers' Digest
19 stationery, so that they would come to the conclusion
20 that -- so that the FBI would come to the conclusion that
21 this must have been done by a writer.

22 Operation Freakout consisted of plans to have some-
23 body pose as me -- find out what I was wearing, have some-
24 one dress like me, look like me, and they would crack up

1 publically and they would try to get me arrested for that
2 person threatening to bomb various places.

3 The other document that I saw was that a number
4 of these lawsuits against me were being maliciously
5 created. For example, they were bringing my book, The
6 Scandal of Scientology, into countries where it had not
7 even been published and they were saying -- you know,
8 so -- "brought the book in so we can sue."

9 The reason for those terrible calls that I had men-
10 tioned was that they had put my name up on walls through-
11 out Manhattan and -- with my phone number, so that people
12 would give me these calls.

13 Operation Owl was in there. I don't know if I
14 mentioned that Operation Freakout originated in Clear-
15 water, even though the basis of the attack was against
16 a New York resident, namely, me.

17 Mr. Flynn showed you Operation Owl, which also
18 originated in Clearwater.

19 Oh, a copy of my diary - the one that had been
20 mailed to me - was found in a file marked "National
21 Council of Churches." They had hidden a lot of their --
22 the stuff that they shouldn't have had. And there were
23 also things that I didn't even know that they had gotten.
24 For example, my mother once complained to me that she

1 couldn't figure out why for the last few years my father
2 kept being audited again and again, and nothing ever
3 turned up; he's an excruciatingly honest person. And
4 there was an order to give an anonymous tip to the IRS
5 that my father was evading taxes, and I don't know if
6 that was the cause of it. But I'm saying that it was
7 this type of thing.

8 I also learned from the documents that they were
9 suing me for things that were true. For example, they
10 repeatedly sued me for saying that Charles Manson was a
11 Scientologist, and there were fifty to a hundred docu-
12 ments showing how they were trying to hide the fact that
13 Charles Manson had studied Scientology.

14 There were surveillance reports. I think I had
15 mentioned that I'd been followed at various times and
16 was pretty sure of it. It's kind of spooky sitting
17 there and reading, you know, "She turned up Aken Street,
18 walked for five minutes there, stopped in the candy
19 store."

20 And there were reports that my friends were being
21 harassed. There was a notation to cause trouble with
22 this gentleman that I mentioned. There were spies'
23 reports and taped transcripts of telephone conversations
24 that I had had with people.

1 The -- I think I spoke to 60 Minutes when I was
2 down here in Clearwater last, and I said then that I had
3 been saying that these types of things had been going on
4 and people kept saying, "Well, what is she talking about?
5 This is a church." And it was incredible vindication to
6 look at these documents and see that everything I had
7 said about Scientology since 1968 was true, and that they
8 had turned out to be worse than anything I had said or
9 even imagined.

10 Now, Scientology, at that time, had said that they
11 had changed. And I know because Gabe -- Mayor Cazares
12 mailed me the same things from the Clearwater Sun, and I
13 read what they told you.

14 While they were saying that, they had learned where
15 I was in Washington, D.C., at the Washington Hilton, and
16 planted a bug by my bed there and, also, a bug on the
17 telephone, during this period of time while they were
18 making these statements in Clearwater about how they had
19 changed.

20 And I do not believe that they have changed, and
21 that -- this is one of the reasons; or the main reason,
22 why I wanted to come here and warn you, because I have
23 been studying this for many years. And I have heard them
24 say that they have changed and, gee, they don't -- they

1 may be issuing that kind of statement after this is over:
2 "Well, you know, there were some things that were said,
3 but, you know, we don't do that anymore" kind of thing.

4 And I've heard before - even before I started
5 researching Scientology - they were saying this. For
6 example, in 1965, there was something called the Austral-
7 ian Inquiry, a Commission to look into Scientology. Any-
8 way, after studying Scientology, the Commission came to
9 the conclusion that Scientology -- quote: "Scientology
10 is evil, its techniques evil. Its practice is a serious
11 threat medically, morally, and socially. Its adherence
12 often establishes it with the mentally ill." And at that
13 time Scientology issued a statement that, of course, they
14 had changed.

15 In 1968, I believe, with the Foster Report, when
16 the English held an inquiry to look into Scientology, and
17 Scientology issued a statement that Fair Game had been
18 cancelled, that the Disconnect Policy had been cancelled,
19 and that everything had changed.

20 In 1975, they had World Prayer Day, and the press
21 all believed at that time that they had changed. In
22 December of 1976, when I settled with them, I believed
23 they had changed. In 1977, when the FBI raided them, they
24 said that they had changed. In '79, when statements came

1 out about what was in the documents, and in 1980, again,
2 they were telling people that they had changed.

3 And my final point is that I believe that they
4 haven't changed. I believe that their basic policy,
5 ever since the policy was first written, has been the
6 Fair Game Policy. The policy is to trick people; the
7 policy is to sue people; the policy is to lie to people
8 and to destroy them. And I certainly know from a per-
9 sonal standpoint.

10 And I've only briefly told you some of the things
11 that they've done to me, so that you're not deceived by
12 their true nature. I've been studying them for fourteen
13 years and, unfortunately, I've been a victim of this
14 cult for fourteen years. And I believe that Scientology
15 has never changed, will never change, and will keep
16 issuing statements to people saying that they've changed.

17 MR. LeCHER: Thank you for your --

18 MR. FLYNN: If I could just make one point of
19 information for the Commission that I believe is sig-
20 nificant: The most relevant portion of Miss Cooper's
21 testimony is the fact that for years she suffered from
22 harassment and framing, which was -- has been proved
23 by some of the documents already in evidence, to which
24 she's testified, and the documents that we put in evidence

1 before this Commission.

2 The final area for this Commission to examine is
3 that of deception on all of the items that I mentioned
4 earlier: deception of confidential auditing information,
5 Mr. Hubbard's background, the goals, policies, purposes,
6 and practices of the organization to the thousands of
7 people that are coming here to Clearwater and paying
8 millions of dollars.

9 Miss Cooper's evidence vividly describes the policy
10 of the Church to utilize the Fair Game Policy, of which
11 most Church members who are paying millions of dollars
12 do not know. And that policy has been described, from
13 1968, in her testimony right up to the present time.

14 And the Commission will be able to derive whatever
15 inferences are appropriate from her testimony with regard
16 to the practice and deception regarding the goals and
17 purposes and operations of the Church of Scientology in
18 this city.

19 MR. LeCHER: I'd like to say: Thank you for your
20 story and thank you for the evidence that relates
21 specifically to Clearwater.

22 I have at various times talked to members of the
23 Church of Scientology who have told me that they've
24 changed, too, as recently as Hebert Jentz a few months

1 ago, who said that they had changed.

2 And I thank you for telling us your story. I
3 don't -- every story today seems to get more incredible
4 as the people come on.

5 And I don't know how you could survive what you
6 have survived, and I think that you must be one hell of
7 a woman.

8 I -- I really have no questions. I don't know how you
9 even -- you can trust anybody anymore: a man that you
10 might meet that he is one of them and trying to get you
11 again. That must prey on your mind. And what with --
12 even with just day-to-day contact with business associ-
13 ates and females and family members.

14 So, I don't want to put you through any more of
15 your story. You've relived it, an aberration for these
16 many years.

17 And I will then refer to my colleagues, and I
18 hope that they will also be sensitive to that fact and
19 also be brief.

20 Who do I start with?

21 MR. BERFIELD: I have -- I have just one question,
22 and it's not so related to what happened to you there.
23 But you said you've spent fifteen years in studying
24 Scientology?

1 MS. COOPER: Well, I started researching in 1968;
2 it's fourteen years.

3 MR. BERFIELD: In this study --

4 MS. COOPER: Yeah.

5 MR. BERFIELD: -- without any reference to
6 religion --

7 MS. COOPER: Mm-mm.

8 MR. BERFIELD: -- and going back, have you found
9 out where they picked up these deceptive ideas from or
10 whose -- were they L. Ron Hubbard's or did he get them
11 from somebody else or what?

12 MS. COOPER: Well, when I researched the book, I
13 went through a tremendous number of early policy letters
14 by Hubbard, things that he wrote about in the early
15 1950's, even when it was Dianetics. And the fraud was
16 just started way back; Hubbard excelled in it. He was con-
17 stantly lying to his people. You find that, you know,
18 that one thing just totally negated another. And I think
19 the deception and the lies all stem from Mr. Hubbard.

20 MR. BERFIELD: Thank you.

21 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

22 Does anyone have any questions?

23 Thank you very much.

24 MR. FLYNN: At this point I'd like to show on the

1 easel a document -- all right. We'll put into evidence
2 the outline of the organization. And if Mr. Walters
3 could come forward - he's still under oath - to simply
4 explain to the Commission what the outline of the organi-
5 zation is and precisely where, at this point, for
6 instance, Mitchell Hermann would fit in with regard to
7 Flag.

8 MR. LeCHER: What is that chart, again, that you
9 have, Mr. Flynn or Mr. Walters? What are you showing us?

10 EDWARD WALTERS, a witness herein,
11 having previously been duly sworn by a Clerk for the
12 City of Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

13 MR. WALTERS: Right here is the organization, the
14 top of the organization for the Guardian's Office.

15 MR. LeCHER: Why don't you go over it with your
16 pointer.

17 MR. WALTERS: All right.

18 It starts at the top with L. Ron Hubbard; he's
19 listed as Commodore and Founder. Below him is the CSGs,
20 Commodore's Staff Guardians, CF 6, there are seven divi-
21 sions: that's Mary Sue Hubbard, by the way.

22 Now, I'll go down this way, first. Right below
23 her is Guardian Worldwide, which is England, Jane Kember.
24

1 She has been the Guardian for -- since the inception.
2 It's a lifetime appointment, which is interesting, because
3 she just got sentenced and she's in jail.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Do they still have these posts?

5 MR. WALTERS: Yes, they do. And your headquarters
6 now is in Clearwater.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: So, convicted felons are serving
8 on an administrative hierarchy chart?

9 MR. WALTERS: No. These eleven that got indicted --

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Convicted?

11 MR. WALTERS: -- convicted were in Scientology until
12 they were put in jail. People who have been trained by
13 them have replaced them and are here in Clearwater.

14 All right. Below Jane Kember is your divisions
15 for Worldwide Divisions. Information, which is really
16 intelligence, is Mo Budlong. He's the name you saw in
17 a lot of those documents. Anything done in Clearwater -
18 and you'll see correspondence, the FBI has it, I've seen
19 it - is in correspondence between Mo Budlong and Clear-
20 water concerning operations.

21 David Gaiman, Legal, just what it says; Finance is
22 Herbie Parkhouse. This man here probably knows more about
23 the financial structure of Scientology. You will not see
24 him on the RPF.

1 Now -- it should be David Gaiman; is says Sheila
2 Gaiman. Social Coordination is David Gaiman's wife.
3 David was -- oh, you've got David over here for PR. David
4 handled all Public Relations Worldwide, and his wife
5 handled the Social Coordinations.

6 And these divisions, by the way, are the same
7 throughout the world, throughout the United States. For
8 example, in Las Vegas, Information was Chuck Reese; I told
9 you about it. Oh, okay.

10 But I just want to make a point --

11 MR. FLYNN: Kevin, put that back up.

12 MR. WALTERS: -- that this organization you see
13 here is the same everywhere; the structure is exactly
14 the same: L. Ron Hubbard's here, Mary Sue, it goes down.
15 And then in your orgs. you have the exact same positions.
16 So, to familiarize you with Clearwater, so you can under-
17 stand your Clearwater operation, in Clearwater, you will
18 have a Director of Information, you'll have a Director of
19 PR, which, I believe, is -- no, I think he's out.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Will you give us also --

21 MR. LeCHER: I heard he's doing missionary work.

22 MR. WALTERS: Yes.

23 I'll tell you who's here.

24 MR. FLYNN: I think it's --

1 MR. WALTERS: Wilhere.

2 MR. FLYNN: -- Wilhere.

3 MR. WALTERS: Yeah, Wilhere.

4 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

5 Will you connect those people with testimony that
6 we've had before, such as Director of Information -- he
7 was the person --

8 MR. WALTERS: All right.

9 Director of Information is involved in all the
10 codified and overt intelligence operations for collecting
11 information on enemies of the Church. So, in Clearwater,
12 I would say, and I say it under oath, that the Director
13 of Information in Clearwater has the files on all of
14 you people.

15 The Director of Public Relations is here in Clear-
16 water; you have a Legal Bureau here in Clearwater; you
17 have Finance here in Clearwater; you'll also have Social
18 Coordination: that directs WISE, Narcanon, et cetera.
19 They will not tell you it's run by the Guardian's Office,
20 but I'll guarantee you it is.

21 All right. Going back to the Worldwide organiza-
22 tion, below them you have your Deputy Guardians. Deputy
23 Guardian in the US, that was in Los Angeles; it was
24 Henning Heldt. He was indicted and is in jail at the

1 moment. Below him was Duke Snider; he was his assistant.

2 Then, again, you have Information/Intelligence --

3 MR. LeCHER: Not the baseball player?

4 MR. WALTERS: No, no, no, no. This is another
5 Duke Snider.

6 Information in the United States; then you have PR
7 for the United States, which was Artie Maren, who, when
8 I was in, used to be sent here to handle quite a few
9 things. Legal, Mary Rezzonico; Finance Mary Heldt, which
10 is the wife of Henning Heldt.

11 You'll notice that it's a very close-knit organiza-
12 tion.

13 Director of Social Coordination is a good friend
14 of mine, Laurie Zurin, who, I will say - it should get
15 her in a lot of trouble - she's going to be out and
16 appearing some day.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Walters --

18 MR. WALTERS: She's a good girl.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. Walters --

20 MR. WALTERS: Yes.

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- the -- just for clarification,
22 now, the top row that you went through there, which was
23 the Worldwide --

24 MR. WALTERS: Right.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- Guardian's --

2 MR. WALTERS: That's in England.

3 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- Office, that's in Clearwater?

4 MR. WALTERS: No. That -- this -- the one I'm
5 showing you is England.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: Is in England.

7 MR. WALTERS: In England.

8 The Worldwide is officially at East Grinstead,
9 England.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: Okay.

11 Now --

12 MR. WALTERS: But here's the thing: You see, this
13 man up here runs the operation.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: Right.

15 MR. WALTERS: All right.

16 An intelligence agent can't do anything unless it
17 runs through the thing to L. Ron Hubbard. So, the real
18 base of operations is where he is, and the connection to
19 him is through Clearwater.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Now, that's located in England.

21 Now, the United States section that you just went
22 through, is that still in Los Angeles now?

23 MR. WALTERS: Information is in Los Angeles; US is
24 still -- Artie's in Los Angeles; Mary's in Los Angeles;

1 Heldt is in Los Angeles; Laurie Zurin is still in Los
2 Angeles.

3 But that's -- that is an organization point of view;
4 the operations are still run out of Clearwater --

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: Right.

6 MR. WALTERS: -- as the senior Flag of all of them.

7 As you know, the guy up here -- these people are
8 all in England, the United States. This man cannot be
9 found. So, there are operatives that work through him
10 wherever he is -- is where they run. And my best know-
11 ledge is that the operation is from Clearwater directly
12 to him, because I can give you a bit of information -- is
13 it okay to say it?

14 MR. FLYNN: You're -- yeah, you're under oath.

15 MR. WALTERS: All right.

16 I don't know -- they have just -- this is what I
17 hear from insiders. Insiders tell me Mr. Hubbard is very
18 harsh when things do not go right. Apparently, the
19 Guardian's Office was supposed to stop you people from
20 this trial -- these hearings. They did not stop you. A
21 lot of them have just been sacked. He has brought in his
22 young crew of CMO, Commodore Messengers Org. These are
23 all the young kids that have been trained by him since
24 they're thirteen years old. They are now going to put

1 Ethics in on Clearwater.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Question: Is this the same group
3 that one of the witnesses the other day referred to as
4 almost in terms of the Gestapo?

5 MR. WALTERS: That's right.

6 These young kids are starey-eyed, devoted to
7 Hubbard, and mayors and people like you will not scare
8 them.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Another witness already mentioned
10 that these CMO people have had so little contact with
11 the outside world, they don't recognize governmental
12 agencies or policies or laws.

13 And these people, according to hearsay, now are
14 in charge of the entire operation. Can you comment to
15 that?

16 MR. WALTERS: Yeah.

17 I know some of them; they started on the ship.
18 They've had no outside schooling at all. They know these
19 policies inside out; they can quote them verbatim. They've
20 been trained by Hubbard. They are tough little cookies,
21 I'll tell you.

22 MR. LeCHER: What does Ethics mean on Clearwater?

23 MR. WALTERS: Ethics means that, apparently, there
24 are attacks -- they look at this open hearing as an

1 open attack, and Ethics will be to come and clean this
2 up.

3 MR. LeCHER: Explain this a little better, "clean
4 this up."

5 MR. WALTERS: Well, that means that -- I'll tell
6 you exactly what --

7 MR. LeCHER: What will happen?

8 MR. WALTERS: All right.

9 This is what'll happen: This division over here
10 will go through all the files that they have, covert and
11 overt on you, and find out what they can use. This
12 division will start a campaign written up to make it look
13 like a beautiful church. This division will sue all of
14 you individually, collectively, and probably the City of
15 Clearwater.

16 MR. LeCHER: They've done that already.

17 MRS. GARVEY: They've already done that.

18 MR. WALTERS: They have?

19 MRS. GARVEY: Yes.

20 MR. WALTERS: The Finance Bureau will have to do
21 whatever they can to make sure the records are safe.
22 The Social Coordination Bureau will have to set up things
23 that show that Narcanon, et cetera, are not part of
24 Scientology.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: You mean, Sammy the Seagull, Gerus
2 Society, Narcanon will be on call to help the publicity
3 throughout Clearwater?

4 MR. WALTERS: Yes.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: The PR will --

6 MR. WALTERS: It will be a massive campaign set
7 here.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: It's in operation --

9 MR. WALTERS: Oh, it's in operation already?

10 Now, if you want to know what -- I know that some
11 of this stuff sounds like I'm trying to make up things,
12 you know.

13 Here is an actual document marked "Secret," con-
14 cerning Clearwater. It's an operation done by Deputy --
15 Deputy Deputy Guardian US. It says here that "Duke" -
16 Duke Snider, you saw his name on the other board - "you
17 asked for a chart for enemy lines used up to this point
18 for Clearwater attack after research of the files was
19 done." This is the files they have on you people.

20 "Attach this chart; it looks complete to me. From
21 this, I see the areas of priority to infiltrate are" --

22 MRS. GARVEY: The Saint Petersburg Times.

23 MR. WALTERS: -- "Saint Petersburg Times, Mayor" --

24 MR. CALDERBANK: Gabe Cazares.

1 MR. WALTERS: -- "Channel 13 TV, Bruce Snyder" --
2 is there a Snyder here?

3 MRS. GARVEY: He's a radio --

4 MR. LeCHER: He's a radio personality.

5 MR. WALTERS: Has he been handled? Is he still
6 around?

7 MRS. GARVEY: No.

8 MR. WALTERS: "Florida Attorney General's Office,
9 Florida State Attorney General Russell.

10 "As things have been quite hectic with the first
11 few days, I wanted to send you this to go over. Any
12 change or additions you want to add would be okay."

13 I would suggest they've probably added quite a few
14 now.

15 MR. FLYNN: For the record, that -- this exhibit on
16 the easel is part of one of the hundreds of documents in
17 an exhibit which will be entitled "Scientology Operations
18 in Clearwater," of which we have made a copy for each of
19 the Commissioners. And that's just one of the documents.

20 That's not Operation Normandy to which I referred.
21 That's just a piece of correspondence about a particular
22 operation. Operation Normandy, which you'll see right at
23 the front of your exhibit, lays out all the areas of
24 infiltration.

1 This particular -- at this particular time and date,
2 they put that down as a priority.

3 MRS. GARVEY: This is dated 1976.

4 MR. FLYNN: That's correct.

5 MR. BERFIELD: I have one more question --

6 MR. WALTERS: Yes, sir.

7 MR. BERFIELD: -- it'll be a loaded one.

8 In your opinion, if this new guard comes in, how
9 would you define them?

10 MR. WALTERS: As young, tough, highly trained,
11 elite, totally dedicated to Scientology.

12 MR. BERFIELD: Rational?

13 MR. WALTERS: Well, not -- not rational or sane
14 in our sense. But do not underestimate their cleverness
15 and dedication to duty.

16 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. Walters, we've heard evidence
17 that shows that policy is still being adhered to.

18 Is that what leads you to believe that this type of
19 thing is happening in the city today?

20 MR. WALTERS: Oh, yes.

21 You see, one of the key words for me and a tech
22 person is "prediction." See, the Guardian's Office gives
23 prediction to an area. You must know what your enemy is
24 going to do. By keeping files on you people and on the

1 city, they can predict what you're going to do. In fact,
2 the whole Guardian's Office Information is -- that's
3 their goal; it's called prediction.

4 And if you fellows ever do anything that they did
5 not expect, that Hubbard gets surprised at, then, most
6 of the fellows here get their heads slapped.

7 MR. LeCHER: Are you saying that local government
8 is in danger?

9 MR. WALTERS: To Scientology? Of course it is.

10 MR. LeCHER: Because -- yeah --

11 MR. WALTERS: Yes.

12 MR. LeCHER: -- we are in danger?

13 MR. WALTERS: Yes.

14 MR. LeCHER: To whatever the young and elite may do?

15 MR. WALTERS: I would not be surprised if you have
16 some new secretaries coming in looking for jobs or have
17 had in the past. Because Hubbard is not fooling around.

18 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

19 MR. FLYNN: Why don't you just describe what --
20 where Hermann's position is. Where is it?

21 MR. WALTERS: Oh, okay.

22 All right, Mitch Hermann here -- you're familiar
23 with him; he's had a lot to do with Clearwater things.
24 He's in the Guardian's Office, handling the Southeastern

1 Section. I see there's an assistant --

2 MRS. GARVEY: That's Mike Cooper that --

3 MR. WALTERS: Yeah.

4 Anyway, this shows he's directly on the Intelli-
5 gence/Information line, and he's well known. I mean,
6 there's no doubt who he is to anybody that's in Scien-
7 tology.

8 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

9 We have another witness. Ladies and gentlemen,
10 we have two more witnesses.

11 MR. FLYNN: What I think I'll do at this time --
12 I don't know what the Commission -- how late the Commis-
13 sion intends to go.

14 There are some documents that I think need to be
15 shown in order to put some of the issues of -- or one of
16 the issues in perspective, which kind of translates into
17 a lot of the other issues in front of the Commission.
18 It's particularly important because of the fact that there
19 are auditing files of thousands of individuals sitting
20 over in the Fort Harrison. All of the people that came
21 here to this city thought that they would be confidential,
22 and, as you know, one of the fundamental issues before
23 the Commission is that one particular consideration.

24 So, I'm going to put into evidence at this point

1 some of the -- just a few of the documents that were
2 seized by the FBI with regard to auditing information.
3 And I again caution you that this is simply a sampling.

4 Very quickly this is a project that the entire
5 exhibit will show regarding -- Mary Sue Hubbard, regard-
6 ing the using of the files as operating targets: "To
7 make use of all files in the organization to effect a
8 major target. These include the personnel files, Ethics
9 files, dead files, central files, training files, pro-
10 cessing files, requests for refunds."

11 It's simply one of their programs with regard to
12 one of the files to give you an idea of the program.

13 This is -- you'll note the date 27 September '76;
14 this pertains to one individual who they were checking
15 out for whatever reason.

16 "Donna's auditing files start in July 1963 at
17 Saint Hill, United Kingdom, where she was on the" -- some
18 type of briefing course, Mr. Walters would know. "She
19 was being run on GR 6 processing at that time. During
20 this auditing, she worked with rock slam" -- RS means
21 rock slam, which, basically, means to substantially fail
22 a security check, where the needle on the Meter slams
23 against the side, which means you've got a very serious
24 withhold or a very serious condition that has to be looked

1 into - "on Jane Kember, LRH, Herbie Parkhouse, and Fred
2 Hare." What that means is she was asked questions and
3 security checked about Kember, Hubbard, Parkhouse, and
4 Hare. And it immediately became very significant because
5 she rock slammed on that particular part of the security
6 check.

7 "Donna has been in Scientology since at least 1952;
8 she attended the Doctor's course in Philadelphia at that
9 time. While at the PDC, she was promiscuous; she slept
10 with four or five men during the course, two of them on
11 the org. premises. She has quite a record of promiscuity
12 in these early years. With three male PCs, she let them
13 touch her genitals during sessions because they got into
14 sexingness. She has masturbated regularly since she was
15 eight years old. Mentions doing it with coffee grounds,
16 doesn't say how, and once had a puppy lick her."

17 As you can see, the whole thing goes through. And
18 it's just to give you an indication of the type of infor-
19 mation that's being used and --

20 MR. GREENE: Read number three, Mike.

21 MR. FLYNN: And in three, you'll see an "Enemy
22 Formula Writeup" done at ASHO, that's the American Saint
23 Hill Organization. "She mentions leaving her husband,
24 Mo, in May 1952, but she does not give his last name.

1 There is no mention of it in our files. She was also
2 married to Bill Fisk, who was shot while she was on
3 the" - that briefing course - "at Saint Hill. Bill had
4 been sleeping with Phoebe Hjelm and Helaine Grimes, now
5 Simmons, before he got shot for sleeping with a student
6 at Seattle Org. Donna had agreed that he could sleep
7 around while she was away. Donna denied him sex even
8 when she was with him and would masturbate to satisfy
9 herself."

10 Yeah, there's another indication there that they
11 were also using the Ethics files. And you'll note the
12 date, 27th September '76, when the Church was in this
13 city and Mr. -- Mayor Cazares was trying to find out who
14 they were.

15 There is a succession of these documents; there are
16 hundreds of them. That's an example. We'll put a num-
17 ber of them into evidence, but it will give you an idea.

18 MRS. GARVEY: Is it all the same flavor in all of
19 them?

20 MR. FLYNN: They're all basically the same flavor;
21 some have crimes, some have sex, some have drugs, some
22 involve specific operations to blackmail: how they're
23 going to do it, extort, some of them are against news
24 people, some of them are against news reporters who tried

1 to conduct investigations that worked where the news
2 reporters dropped their investigations; the Scientology
3 investigations disclosed extramarital affairs, whatever.

4 MR. LeCHER: All right.

5 You have told that they may -- you or Mr. Walters.
6 I wonder about the newsmen that are covering this event.

7 Do you think they should take special care them-
8 selves?

9 MR. FLYNN: I would say that, you know, they're on,
10 as Mr. Walters would describe, they're on the PR end, and
11 they've just been getting hit with heavy PR day in and
12 day out. Probably, for the last three or four months,
13 every other hour, someone has been going down to the
14 Clearwater Sun and the Saint Pete Times, Clearwater
15 Station, and just hitting the reporters constantly with
16 PR. They sent out that booklet in Clearwater, "The Way
17 to Happiness," you know, the --

18 MRS. GARVEY: He meant from the other side, the
19 harassment side.

20 MR. LeCHER: I mean harassment.

21 We may all be able to indicate a few things that
22 we suspect, but I wonder about the reporters, they may
23 have to be on their guard, too.

24 MR.. FLYNN: It depends whether they're cooperating

1 or not.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: Dianetics --

3 MR. FLYNN: If they still pose a threat, then, they
4 would go, as Mr. Walters and as many witnesses have
5 testified, they go to the next level of operation. If
6 they still pose a threat, they go to the next level of
7 operation.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. Flynn, how would you charac-
9 terize, say -- Austin, Texas was mentioned by Mr. Mayer.
10 And there is an article in one of the newspapers today
11 about Austin, Texas having a -- what is it --

12 MR. FLYNN: Proclamation.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: -- Proclamation, proclaiming how
14 great Dianetics was. Now, this appeared in the paper.

15 Is this an example of reporters and the heavy PR
16 that they are fed day in and day out? How can something
17 like that occur?

18 MR. FLYNN: You can draw your own inferences from
19 the evidence based on policy. The -- it significantly
20 appeared next to the Clearwater -- the article about
21 Scientology in today's paper. You can draw your own
22 significant -- your own inferences from the evidence that
23 you've heard to this point.

24 MR. LeCHER: I believe I owe their mayor a letter.

1 MR. FLYNN: Jack Clark, please.

2 I say Jack Clark because I've come to know him;
3 it's Dr. John Clark, and he's one of the -- well, I won't
4 state his credentials.

5 MR. LeCHER: Dr. Clark, will you be sworn in,
6 please.

7
8 JOHN G. CLARK, M.D., a witness herein,
9 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
10 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

11 MR. LeCHER: I must also ask you the same five
12 standard questions, sir.

13 Are you appearing here today and testifying under
14 oath voluntarily?

15 DR. CLARK: Yes. Yes, I am.

16 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone for your
17 testimony, other than expenses for coming to Clearwater?

18 DR. CLARK: No.

19 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
20 Church of Scientology?

21 DR. CLARK: No.

22 MR. LeCHER: Do they have a lawsuit against you?

23 DR. CLARK: Yes.

24 MR. LeCHER: They do.

1 Has anyone suggested to you that you should state
2 anything but the truth or has anyone suggested that you
3 change your testimony for any reason?

4 DR. CLARK: No.

5 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

6 Mr. Flynn, do you want to present your witness?
7 Or Dr. Clark -- how you would like to proceed.

8 MR. FLYNN: The purpose of this testimony is
9 basically in the line of expert testimony, because there
10 are mental health conditions involved in this city.
11 There are mental health issues that have been presented
12 before the Board.

13 In addition to that, there's a level of harassment,
14 which goes to some of the policy considerations I men-
15 tioned earlier, that Dr. Clark has been subjected to. But
16 his basic testimony is of an expert nature with regard
17 to some of these mental health issues.

18 MR. LeCHER: Since you are an expert witness, state
19 your qualifications.

20 DR. CLARK: My name is John G. Clark, Jr., M.D. I
21 have been an M.D. from 1953, at the time that I graduated
22 from Harvard Medical School. I have been trained in
23 psychiatry in the Boston area in the Massachusetts
24 General Hospital and McLean Hospital in Belmont,

1 Massachusetts, also a part of the Massachusetts General
2 Hospital. I have worked on the staff - I want to say on
3 staff - on the staffs of these two hospitals, as well as
4 another organization in the same area. I am now in
5 private practice since 1973.

6 My work has been very, very wide, mostly clinical
7 and having to do with people from adolescence on up, as
8 well as community work in various places around the Boston
9 area.

10 My interest in Scientology came along at the same
11 time as my interest in rapid conversions and the pro-
12 cesses that led up to those conversions. This is not a
13 well-known area in the psychiatric world.

14 MR. LeCHER: Explain "rapid conversions."

15 DR. CLARK: Rapid conversion tends to be a massive
16 change of personality, of belief systems over a very short
17 time, brought about by usually deceptive practices of
18 the people who want to get these people. There are also
19 very many other kinds of conversions which are expected,
20 useful, sometimes related to real illness, such as tem-
21 poral lobe epilepsy, for instance. It's a very, very
22 interesting area.

23 I showed my interest two years after I began to do
24 some studying. I studied as a result of being asked by a

1 fellow physician for help; he had problems with his son,
2 who was a disturbed young man, who had gotten himself
3 involved in the Hare Krishna doctrine -- cult. Two
4 years later, approximately, I had begun to believe these
5 astounding things that I was hearing about and actually
6 seeing. It was very hard to believe. In other words, I
7 did not go into this study clearly knowing what I wanted
8 to hear.

9 I then spoke - gave testimony - to the Special --
10 a group, the Special Committee of the Senate of the
11 Vermont Legislature in '76. And from that time the pan-
12 has been in the fire because I did mention, among a few
13 other people, the Church of Scientology. I found out
14 much later, just very recently, that they had been
15 worried about me before I even got to that particular
16 place to speak my words.

17 From that point on there has been an unrelenting
18 kind of harassment, whatever they wish to try to do to
19 me to try to get me out of this business. They seem to
20 be very, very frightened of somebody legitimate, as a
21 Harvard professor, who could possibly talk in a negative
22 way about their group.

23 I might say in this regard that I am not interest
24 in religion itself; I'm interested in the behavior of

1 groups and the relationship of those behaviors to what
2 I would consider to be harmful results, and especially
3 through the process of conversion. And I will not have
4 time to give you the entire view of that.

5 I would like to first show you how hard it is for
6 any kind of a professional to look into this area. This
7 is very much like an anthropologist who decides that he
8 must go up to see the river in New Guinea in order to
9 look into the mating processes of the -- of some of the
10 natives up there who are still eating one another to a
11 degree. Now, I don't mean to put down their culture;
12 their culture in some ways is just as valid as ours. But
13 the people who come in from the outside are not necessari-
14 ly going to be treated all that well. And it was my
15 interest of looking into the cultures of these groups to
16 find out what had happened to the individuals who had
17 been taken into them and why had they changed so much
18 and why had they become so mean.

19 Now, if I can give you a brief listing of what has
20 happened: In my writing, I have put down some of the
21 attacks on me. In '77, the -- I got my first letter from
22 them, telling me that I had said the wrong things in the
23 Vermont legislative -- the hearing and I'd better stop it.
24 I got a series of calls, which I pretty much ignored.

1 They, also, quite simultaneously, wrote a whole series
2 of letters to the Deans at Harvard Medical School and
3 the head of the Massachusetts General Hospital.

4 In '78, three of my patients were investigated
5 enough so that their places of work and their places of
6 living were known to Scientologists, who then called them
7 and asked them about my behavior in treating them. To a
8 doctor, that is extremely bad business, just terrible.

9 Shortly after that, in about '78, I was called a
10 Communist because of their interest in my daughter and my
11 having gone to Russia to visit. And they put that into
12 some very interesting fiction which they had put together
13 from all of their investigations of my neighbors and
14 friends, which they then presented to the legislative
15 committee that was beginning to look into some matters of
16 other cults.

17 They also tried twice to keep me out of England by
18 sending a very strong protest to the proper authorities
19 in England, looking into the matters on Ron Hubbard.

20 In 1979, I and a number of others were picketed
21 by the Scientologists twice, once in Pennsylvania at a
22 meeting we were having, talking about cults, and one at
23 the then IMH where we were having the only meeting on
24 the cults that the government has been able to put

1 together so far.

2 In 1978, they lodged a complaint to the Board of
3 Registration of Medicine. This is the Board that gives
4 us our right to practice medicine, and that's in Massa-
5 chusetts. This had to do with my behavior in court on a
6 case that had to do with the original family that brought
7 me into this, quote, business in the first place. That
8 particular problem with the Board of Registration
9 stretched on for a very long time.

10 By 1979, they were in Montreal passing out flyers
11 at the place where I was giving my lectures at McGill.
12 This time they were calling me a Nazi.

13 In 1980, they were sending an article to all kinds
14 of people very high up in my profession, purporting to be
15 something rather favorable to me, except that it was
16 about ECT, electroshock treatment, and it had some
17 material in it that claimed to be direct quotes from me
18 saying that deprogramming could be brought about by the
19 use of electroshock treatment. Fortunately, I have
20 friends who called me up and said, "What's this all
21 about?" But I'm still quite sure that some people think
22 that I'm advocating ECT.

23 They began to blow hard in various ways toward me
24 in their magazine or their Freedom paper. And we have one

1 copy of the most recent ones, '78 to '81. They call me
2 a Nazi and one of the leaders of the ARM, as they call it
3 in their own internal records, and that's the Anti-
4 Religious Movement.

5 Several people approached my professor, one a
6 college student who was looking for information and just
7 happened to mention me in some way that was really quite
8 derogatory, a patient who tried to get into my office and
9 talk to me, somebody on one of the television shows from
10 the Citizens' Commission on Human Rights talked about my
11 use of drugs and ECT and my terrible attitude toward
12 these people. Another -- in about '80, another student
13 wanted to study deprogramming, and it was quite clear,
14 when we checked up, that was certainly not what she was
15 interested in. It goes on and on and on.

16 In 1981, another complaint was lodged at the Board
17 of Registration, and in this attempt -- a second one was
18 also lodged, a third one now lodged against me, both of
19 them very, very clear -- one from a Scientologist and
20 the other one, again, purportedly from a Moonie; however,
21 it had all the earmarks of the Scientology capacity to
22 mischief.

23 By the way, all of these complaints have been dis-
24 missed. The first one was dismissed with a little bit of

1 nastiness on the part of the Board, who could not -- which
2 could not understand what was going on. The last two,
3 which recently came to me, are clear, clear releases from
4 any obligation at all.

5 This past year from last July, there has been a
6 fire storm of attacks. There's almost something once or
7 twice every week coming. Because I haven't answered to
8 them, they can't do some of the things they did to
9 Paulette. But they did a few other interesting things,
10 such as picketing the Mass. General Hospital and passing
11 out some very interesting leaflets, offering a twenty-
12 five thousand dollar-reward, for instance, for informa-
13 tion leading to my conviction. This was done several
14 months. They approached every newspaper, every TV out-
15 let --

16 MR. CALDERBANK: They wanted --

17 MR. LeCHER: They only offered four thousand nine
18 hundred fifty for ours.

19 DR. CLARK: Well, that's beginning to make me think
20 that I'm bigger than I really thought I was. I was
21 thinking, as I was listening to everybody here, "I'm a
22 pretty small potato."

23 These are all -- it even goes on further. They also
24 informed me, in the midst of all of this, of the kangaroo

1 court Ethics trial last fall, and they had -- I guess you
2 could probably believe that they convicted me. They
3 offered me the possibility of some kind of release if I
4 would just admit that I was wrong. And so it goes on and
5 on and on.

6 And it's obvious that this organization does not
7 want to be criticized, and the way of handling criticism
8 is the ad hominem attack, which is what we've been talk-
9 ing about all along. It is very, very unlikely that they
10 will really argue on the basis of the facts or of the
11 allegations against them. They will simply try to do
12 what they have done before, that is, to make life too
13 painful for anybody to go on with this kind of attack,
14 which they are launching on me.

15 They consider me someone with some sort of animus
16 against them, of course, that they will try to prove in
17 these various cases against me. As a matter of fact,
18 they make their own enemies, obsessively make their own
19 enemies. They try very hard not to let anybody know
20 that, but anybody who even begins to look into this and
21 speaks out at all is going to find that the enemy situa-
22 tion has once again arisen.

23 I would like now to talk a little bit about what
24 happens from a clinical view. I'm really not all that

1 happy just to talk about my own predicament, the degra-
2 dations against me. I'm surviving them and -- but I
3 think they are somehow illustrative of --

4 MRS. GARVEY: We know what we're going to have to
5 go through.

6 DR. CLARK: You might as well face up to it, you're
7 becoming heroes whether you like it or not. We'll talk
8 about suggestions for them maybe later.

9 What happens, and in general, what happens to the
10 people who go into Scientology? Why do they change so
11 much? How does it happen? What is there about the human
12 mind that most of us do not want to know that does it
13 make it possible for one of our children, who has been
14 thoroughly healthy in every way, to be caught up in one
15 of the groups and, suddenly or over a few months, are
16 simply lost to the parents and to the community?

17 The change in these people tends to be very, very
18 large. The parents who have said to me that "My two
19 older kids got into drugs, sex, and they led me on a
20 merry chase. But I knew that was just sort of added on,
21 applied to them. And my younger daughter, who was the
22 nice one, behaving herself, went into the Divine Light
23 Mission. The change was integral." This is also
24 true of the changes of people who go into the Church of

1 Scientology. In fact, in some ways it -- the changes are
2 even more complete.

3 It's no wonder, for instance, that they tend not
4 to like to have people in and amongst them whose parents
5 and family do not agree with their choice, if you want to
6 call it choice; they're PTSS, and often they do not allow
7 them to stay in. It's much easier to bring about these
8 changes and have it not noted - or them not note it - if
9 the parents don't -- either don't give a damn or they
10 sort of like the quiet, controlled people that have now
11 stopped taking drugs and are very, very busy doing what
12 they're supposed to do.

13 But, in fact, the human mind is capable of an
14 enormous amount of change in a short time. It can, as I
15 said, happen from natural forces. It's quite commonly
16 seen in temporal lobe epilepsy, and sometimes - I should
17 also mention just for your imaginations to work on - that
18 the people with temporal lobe epilepsy are also charac-
19 terized by their absolute need to write, constantly
20 write: turn out poetry and they just write in a des-
21 criptive manner. I'm not suggesting that anybody we have
22 talked about might have this.

23 It's very clear that at some point these people wh
24 also go through various kinds of conversions do have --

1 that those who go through conversions naturally do have
2 real changes in their brain structure. But you don't
3 have to have that. You can be an ordinary kid who's just
4 going through a bad time, and that's why the late ado-
5 lescents are the best marketplace for cults, in general.

6 The process is quite fairly simple to bring them
7 in. First, get their attention, entice them into some-
8 place where they can then be bombarded with information;
9 it's a closed system where all the information is con-
10 trolled and where the seduction can be set up. Over a
11 period of time - and it can be very short from minutes to
12 two weeks - the attention of the individual is very care-
13 fully narrowed, just narrowed. These various processes that
14 are used in Scientology, for instance, are attention-
15 narrowing processes. It requires the individual to
16 attend to only the task for a very, very long time.

17 There is in this a great relationship to formal
18 hypnosis; in fact, exactly the same is just done to them.
19 And the object is to push the mind, the attention, to a
20 narrower and narrower state until something kind of
21 breaks. It's a system -- the mind is a system that is
22 highly flexible. But with any flexible system, there is
23 a limit of elasticity. If you push it hard enough, you'll
24 crack, snap, whatever you want to call it. Any one of us,

1 under certain circumstances of very high pressure, might
2 find themselves cracking one way or another.

3 Then, if the person who has brought about this
4 cracking, this changing, this snapping, this trance
5 state, can manage that state for a time, can manage it
6 and keep it under control - in other words, the person's
7 old mind has been taken down under this heavy pressure,
8 a kind of emergency - if they can keep it under control
9 long enough, the individual must then identify with those
10 people who are managing the whole system; they identify
11 with everything. They begin to take in information:
12 the rules, the language, everything. It's like falling
13 in love. It's the same process, except that it's managed
14 differently.

15 That's why this is so mundane in one respect:
16 There's nothing about this that is really, really spooky.
17 But if this management is done just the right way by
18 very intense processes and by people who signal their
19 intent to control - which, again, applies to this
20 matter today - the individual, as I said, becomes almost
21 as all those other people. The only way to survive, for
22 the mind to survive, is to become as much like the per-
23 sons who have begun to hold you as hostage as possible.

24 There has been a lot written about the Stockholm

1 effect in hostage taking, where the people who are with
2 the hostage for a long time in a very ambiguous state,
3 not knowing whether or not they're going to be killed
4 or tortured or something -- they're -- these people some-
5 times fall in love with the person who has held them
6 hostage. Again, go back to the fact that most of this is
7 normal but it is manipulated.

8 It must be remembered that in almost all -- in fact,
9 really in all of those organizations which are most
10 dangerous, nobody is told in advance what is going to
11 happen. There is no argument about the virtues of the
12 organization - and it's interesting - until after the
13 change of the mind or conversion. It's a snapping, it's
14 whatever you want, a leap into another world.

15 Now, this means that these people who have gone
16 that far are now in a different state of mind, essential-
17 ly, a separate personality; it's a dual personality. The
18 first personality is put on hold. Again, it sounds like
19 science fiction, but it can be done and it can be
20 replicated; it's been done in -- by hypnosis. And it has
21 to be managed by more and more and more processes, so
22 that the whole thing just sort of gels and people just
23 can't get out of it; they cannot get out of it.

24 But it's made easier for them to stay in if they are

1 kept with their own people, so they don't have a chance
2 to sort of talk -- talk it out with people completely
3 outside. And this is what happens.

4 Now, in this state, these various kinds of cults
5 become the most dangerous of all people, that is, they
6 take on as a mass the we/they psychology. That is, "We
7 exist and we're real; they" - they're all of you - "you
8 don't understand us." And because they're so focused and
9 cannot remember any of the tenderness of their earlier
10 times toward parents or friends or others, they are
11 extremely intolerant, extremely intolerant. They are
12 behavior paranoia in their simplicity of thinking and are
13 easily pushed -- well, they're totally pushed around by
14 the leaders.

15 This means that within two weeks individuals who
16 have first come into the Moonies have signed checks for
17 a hundred and fifty thousand dollars to go to the Moonies.
18 You see, it isn't just the Church of Scientology that can
19 get a lot of money out of people in a hurry.

20 The -- in these groups, almost -- in almost every
21 case - it's almost a real rule - the people who run them
22 are living still; they're the living leaders who are
23 charismatic individuals who have found out how to manipu
24 late other people's minds. It's very hard for most cults

1 to continue to go on; probably, 99.9 percent of them
2 die within one generation for very good reasons, often
3 because the children don't go along with it.

4 They are in this state, the we/they state, entirely
5 non-charitable. They do not see others as valid; they're
6 not real. In the case of the Church of Scientology,
7 those who have gone far enough through their processing
8 cannot believe that it is important to be a human being;
9 they're something else. And those of us who are human
10 beings are -- have no regard from them; our lives are of
11 no importance whatsoever. It's something else. Perhaps,
12 you'll say that's getting into their religious beliefs,
13 but sometimes you have to know something about the nature
14 of belief in order to understand behavior, especially,
15 as egregious as that which we are talking about today.

16 Another factor in this is all too often the reason
17 that individuals come out in a really hurt state, and
18 that is, they reject all magic except their own. Now,
19 I'm saying that somewhat ironically. They think, for
20 instance, that medicine is bad magic and, thus, the --
21 because they also reject the scientific view of know-
22 ledge, they are unable to understand the medicine, medi-
23 cal position on anything. Thus, too many of these
24 groups - and, again, I'm talking about Scientology in

1 particular - are not at all capable of approaching doc-
2 tors effectively, and they're often too late when they
3 do. They have a few captured physicians working with
4 them, and I say this with no prejudice to the -- to them,
5 that many, many chiropractors have been gotten in.

6 It is necessary in the case of all of these groups
7 that they isolate these people that they have just
8 brought in, the proselytes - isolate them from their
9 families - because their families remind them too much
10 of the past, and they can sometimes break into the mind
11 control state.

12 And one other little thing, just -- I'll just men-
13 tion the TRs and the bull baiting, which are seen as --
14 by me, as managing the focusing of the mind. There are
15 many, many ways of doing that. I think that the par-
16 ticular ways the Church of Scientology does this can be
17 extraordinarily damaging over the long run and over the
18 short run.

19 These are exercises involving two people across
20 the table with the E-Meter in the middle, with the face
21 of the E-Meter to the auditor. And, thus, certain kinds
22 of processes -- questions are asked over and over again
23 in such a way that it is impossible for the individual
24 to answer them really quite right, depending a little bit

1 on what the auditor wants to get from these persons.
2 Well, this is also eye-to-eye contact. The individual
3 who is brought in must pay absolute attention to the
4 auditor or will have to flunk and go back to the beginning
5 of the rather painful processes. And by the time the
6 individual gets through with this — the mind is already
7 controlled. And by the time they go through the first
8 auditing courses successfully, they are entirely under
9 control of the auditor himself and will take almost any
10 order from that person.

11 One of the more heavy auditing processes that I
12 have heard of is the one of sitting knee-to-knee for
13 about eight hours, looking at one another, and saying
14 nothing and not blinking or answering some absurd ques-
15 tion over and over and over and over and over, perhaps,
16 sometimes with bull baiting, which means they'll have to
17 answer these questions correctly no matter what else is
18 going on in the room, whether or not there are personal
19 touches, some kind of laughing, some kind of nasty state-
20 ments, sexual approaches. The person being audited
21 cannot even begin to show any movement on the E-Meter
22 or any in the face; it must absolutely be flat. In
23 other words, that person must not respond emotionally to
24 anything.

1 This kind of treatment of the individual, to cut
2 out any response to, for instance, conscience or the
3 outrageous processes that are going on, simply empties
4 them of this capacity to act really in a human way.

5 Now, for a while it feels fine. But often these
6 people have gone through an enormous amount of pain to
7 get to the point where they think they're beginning to
8 be happier. And, in fact, very few of them are happy;
9 they're just reaching for that which they have been
10 promised but never comes.

11 There is much to say about the Church of Scien-
12 tology that may not sound exactly scientific, but it is
13 nonetheless, sort of conclusional. One is that what
14 they do is, in general, very hurting, often to the detri-
15 ment of the mind. A number of people have come out of
16 Scientology with no minds at all, no flow of conscious-
17 ness. It has taken years to reinstate the mind. And all
18 they remember as they come out is hurt, hurt, hurt.
19 Almost every one of these processes, unless you happen
20 to be a celebrity, is extremely painful.

21 If you are doing the wrong thing, just like the
22 child you are subjected to punishments. Many of these
23 things we've talked about today are very much like a
24 punishment to a bad child, except it goes so much further.

1 But here, when the mind begins to fail and is entirely
2 held up by the processes and by the orders of an organi-
3 zation like this, if something goes wrong within that
4 system - that is, that the biological self, which cannot
5 always be kept completely programmed, or the system
6 itself, which has its own glitches - the individual may be
7 suddenly put out on a ledge, as it were, with nothing
8 holding -- nothing to hold on: the mind emptied of any
9 natural flow of consciousness, of memories of the past,
10 of an adequate control of the English language. Yes,
11 they almost never seem to be able to put a document
12 together that is in decent English language. And these
13 individuals either must go flat out mad or - in several
14 cases we've heard about, probably many cases that have
15 been lost - in suicide.

16 Fortunately, for a lot of people who have come out by
17 themselves, after a while - as with the other cults -
18 their minds will reassemble themselves over a period of
19 time, at least a year is necessary. The first year or
20 so may be one of great pain, much anxiety for all of the
21 rest of the family, and it gets even worse when they
22 realize how much of the world they have lost, how much
23 of a chance for a happy life they have left behind.

24 Thank you.

1 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

2 Is an E-Meter similar in controlling your emotions
3 to a bio-feedback machine?

4 DR. CLARK: Yes, it is. And it's -- it's a lie
5 detector, in effect.

6 One of the great achievements of the Church of
7 Scientology is that it seems to be able to teach people
8 how to beat the polygraph, and I have my reservations
9 about the worth of that. But that's essentially what it
10 is.

11 It short circuits the certain kinds of mental pro-
12 cesses, if used by a very trained person, that is, that
13 they can appear to be a little magical about their under-
14 standing of what's going on in the person who is being
15 audited. They get that person's attention more and more
16 focused. It's very simple to do without the E-Meter,
17 as a matter of fact.

18 But almost all of us know that in hypnotism -- the
19 old-fashioned mesmerizers used to do this kind of thing
20 with some kind of device to center the mind on, and this is
21 really what the E-Meter is all about.

22 MR. LeCHER: If those that are so committed, so
23 hooked, can somehow read the newspaper or watch these
24 hearings, do you think they'd have enough to be questioning

1 their lifestyle and want to get out?

2 DR. CLARK: I somehow think the threat of the cult
3 conversion and the kind of dreadful things that happen
4 after are not as likely to lure a victim as, for instance,
5 drugs, because they believe that they can handle drugs
6 over a shorter period of time.

7 However, drugs are not being handled by quite such
8 clever people as the cults. And the cults also have the
9 friendship of the Civil Liberties Union and some of the
10 leaders in the major denominations to sort of stand
11 behind them and stand aside of them, saying this is also
12 legitimate religions of whatever kind.

13 In that sense, I can't answer your question really
14 yes or no.

15 MR. FLYNN: If I may just interject one minute:
16 The city received a letter from Branch -- it was the
17 National Committee Against Repressive Legislation, which
18 was sent to Mr. Shoemaker, and it opposed these hearings.
19 There are -- there is at least one name, perhaps, two
20 names - but definitely one name of an individual attorney
21 on the list of that National Committee Against Repressive
22 Legislation who defended Mary Sue Hubbard and other
23 defendants in the Washington criminal case. And upon
24 various items of information that we have received, the

1 legal fees in connection with that defense were in the
2 range of four to six million dollars.

3 MRS. GARVEY: We're in the wrong business.

4 MR. BERFIELD: You better well believe it.

5 MR. LeCHER: What - all right, I know we're getting
6 late but - what suggestions can you give us? What should
7 we do and what can we do as elected representatives of
8 a fair-sized city taken over by a large organization
9 that has much more, frankly, money than we have?

10 DR. CLARK: That's right.

11 I did not mention at the very beginning that I have
12 been facing two nuisance suits for conspiracy, and they
13 are nuisance suits. And, indeed, the nuisance suits will
14 be a part of the future.

15 It's up to us to rally our allies, the people who
16 believe in the open society, who can smell tyranny when
17 they hear about it. It's about time in this particular
18 period that we admit that we're, as a country, in a lot
19 of trouble, and countries in a lot of trouble have always
20 had business with cults all through history. But, now,
21 it's time to stand up and say that "This isn't working."

22 Now, these are groups who do not like to deal with
23 the truth about them. They believe in what they're
24 doing, but they know that from another point of view what

1 they're doing is impermissible. What we can ask of them
2 in meetings like this, when they have their time, is to
3 speak to the issues instead of attacking individuals -
4 which they will do, they'll attack individuals - so that
5 they can compete in the marketplace of ideas and beliefs,
6 and we'll let them compete all they wish. But we must
7 not forget we're talking about their behavior which is,
8 essentially, terrorist.

9 MR. LeCHER: I think that's very well put. What
10 you're saying is that -- do not attack individuals but
11 compete in the marketplace for ideas, and I think that's
12 very well put, and I appreciate it.

13 Do you want -- Commissioners, do you want any ques-
14 tions? I know it's getting late and --

15 MR. CALDERBANK: How would you guide us? This
16 Commission is very concerned about the difference between
17 church and state and secular or religious interest. How
18 would you guide us on -- you mentioned behavior. How
19 would you guide us? How would you give advice to this
20 Commission on how to proceed?

21 DR. CLARK: I face that right now. It evolved --
22 in this country, the behavior of religious organizations
23 is not somehow guarded by the First Amendment. There's
24 a lot of nonsense about that. This whole country is not

1 set up in order that religions can do whatever they
2 wanted to do; we're really quite frightened of the word
3 "religion."

4 On the contrary, the First Amendment has two sides:
5 It's there to protect us from religious zealotry and
6 fanaticism, as much as the other way around. How many
7 of our first immigrants were running away, not from
8 government but from religious persecution by religions?

9 This is going to be the problem of the next genera-
10 tion of religious organizations and new organizations of
11 minds and groups. Now, sometimes, they will not call them
12 religious organizations, but right now in this country,
13 because there's a First Amendment, it is useful to do so.

14 In the case of the Church of Scientology, you can
15 almost say that it is an ad hoc religion; it became a
16 religion because it realized that it was convenient to be
17 a religion.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Do you feel your First Amendment
19 rights have been impeded by their actions?

20 DR. CLARK: Well, in --

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Freedom of speech.

22 DR. CLARK: -- my case, I don't think they have.
23 I think they've blown it so far. They've just simply
24 made me more interested in what they're doing.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: Last question is: We've heard
2 belief and behavior, and we've had a lot of people say
3 their behavior is either criminal or fraudulent.

4 How would you characterize their behavior?

5 DR. CLARK: I think I would characterize this
6 organization by the definitions of the court of their
7 leaders: it's a criminal organization. And, certainly,
8 the behavior toward Paulette Cooper and to many others
9 is truly criminal. Their willingness, their readiness
10 to do anything criminal in order to do what they want
11 to do is characteristic of their criminal mind.

12 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

13 We have a -- Commissioners, I'd like to get to the
14 last witness. If you have something you must ask Dr.
15 Clark, go ahead.

16 Thank you very much, sir. You have summed it up
17 very well.

18 We have one more witness that won't last too long,
19 but because of things beyond our control we're going to
20 take a five-minute break and come right back.

21 (Whereupon, a recess was taken.)

22 (Whereupon, the hearing resumed.)

23 MR. LeCHER: Am I on?

24 Ladies and gentlemen, take your seats, please.

1 Gentlemen in the aisle, ladies and gentlemen, please take
2 your seats. We don't have much longer to go, but we do
3 want to conclude this evening.

4 Madam Clerk, will you swear the witness.

5
6 BROWN MCKEE, a witness herein,
7 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of
8 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

9 MR. LeCHER: What is your name, sir?

10 MR. MCKEE: Brown McKee.

11 MR. LeCHER: Brown McKee, okay.

12 I must ask you the same five standard questions.

13 Are you appearing here today to testify under oath
14 voluntarily?

15 MR. MCKEE: Yes, I am.

16 MR. LeCHER: Have you been paid by anyone, except
17 expenses to come to Clearwater?

18 MR. MCKEE: No.

19 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a lawsuit against the
20 Church of Scientology?

21 MR. MCKEE: No.

22 MR. LeCHER: Does the Church of Scientology have a
23 lawsuit against you?

24 MR. MCKEE: No.

1 MR. LeCHER: Has anyone suggested to you that you
2 should state anything but the truth or has anyone
3 suggested that you change your testimony for any reason?

4 MR. McKEE: No.

5 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

6 Mr. Flynn, do you want to present your witness?

7 MR. FLYNN: Go ahead.

8 MR. McKEE: I've been a Scientologist for twenty-
9 four years; I'm what's called a field Scientologist. I'm
10 not a member of the Sea Org., never have been. I operate
11 or did operate groups in Connecticut called missions,
12 which are autonomous Scientology groups. I left the
13 Church in January of this year.

14 This is the second forum that I've been to in
15 Clearwater recently. The first one being in December of
16 last year, where a group of field persons such as myself,
17 approximately fifty - we're all mission holders, we're
18 the executives of the field groups - got together and
19 demanded that officials of the Church and the Sea Org.
20 be present to hear our protests and our demands for
21 reform within the Church.

22 Now, this hearing went on for five days. And during
23 this time, it was probably one of the most emotionally
24 moving experiences I've ever had. I heard people give

1 firsthand accounts of what they had experienced in Scien-
2 tology; these are people still in Scientology, by the way.
3 And I thought that some of my hardships were terrible,
4 but after hearing those I found I really got off quite
5 easy.

6 I heard a woman describe how her husband went to
7 Flag when it was on the ship because he had a heart con-
8 dition, and one of Hubbard's prescriptions for that is
9 Vitamin E. And he came back, and according to her des-
10 cription - I knew the man, by the way - he came back a
11 broken man and died two or three months later. And it's
12 a little gory, but the autopsy showed his stomach to be
13 filled with undissolved Vitamin E capsules.

14 Another mother was -- spoke at this, and it was
15 almost like listening to a pregnant woman crazy with
16 grief. Her daughter, who was a young mother, had -- was
17 also a field Scientologist running a group in Sacramento,
18 California and had come to the Flag Base for the high-
19 level auditing called NED for OTs, and had become so
20 distressed and so upset that she kept calling her, "Come
21 do something to help me." She couldn't travel from Cali-
22 fornia to Clearwater because she was simply too ill. So
23 couldn't do they something, couldn't she transfer her
24 money to Los Angeles and get the auditing to help her?

1 And they said, "No, we can't transfer the money."

2 Shortly after that, the young woman died. The
3 autopsy disclosed it was from a ruptured pancreas, which
4 I'm told is a stress-induced condition.

5 Hearing her mother who's an old, old friend of
6 mine, as was the young woman, and her husband tell these
7 things to the Church officials as examples of the inhuman-
8 ity and complete lack of regard for the humanity of
9 people of this so-called Church was one of the most
10 difficult tasks that I had to ever sit through.

11 I probably have a reputation in Scientology as
12 one of the more vocal malcontents. I've been pressing
13 for some form of reform for many, many years.

14 After this meeting in December, we went back to
15 Connecticut with the firm conviction that there was no
16 interest within this Church for reform. The dirty tricks,
17 the Guardian's Office operations, and that type of thing,
18 which they told us were all a matter of the past, we
19 found out were not a matter of the past. They tried to
20 break up the meeting that we field people had called -
21 they didn't call it - that we had called down here to try
22 to get some of these things corrected.

23 Now, I've been a minister of this Church for some
24 sixteen years, and I really took it seriously. I've

1 married people, I've buried them, and to me it was a duty
2 and an honor. And to find out what my Church had been
3 doing -- it's a little hard on me.

4 Now, there's one other point: And one of the main
5 reasons why I wanted to be here is that I see -- I'm a
6 professional auditor and case supervisor, and I've been
7 doing it for many years. I know what is taught and the
8 technology of Ron Hubbard. I've heard his tapes by the
9 hundreds and have read his book by the thousands. And I
10 can quote almost anything you'd like quoted right now. I
11 know what this man says about illness, and illness is
12 cured only by auditing. That is not what is told to the
13 public, but that is what is taught us, we, who are the
14 practitioners and the ministers of the Church.

15 The reason why I say this is because I believe it's
16 dangerous. My late wife, Julie, and I were in Washington
17 in 1977 taking training. And I had recently had one of --
18 at that time had another one of my run-ins with a
19 Guardian; they know my people to be vocal. And so, I was
20 ordered to sec checks, security checking, and a guard
21 posted on me and my wife, who was guilty because she was
22 my wife.

23 I managed to get through the security check because
24 I'm an expert security checker, and I know how to get

1 through them. You learn these things -- you know how
2 to -- we people in the field learn how to survive at the
3 Flag Land Base and at the orgs.; we've learned the rules
4 of the game, if you understand my point. We're -- we
5 don't walk in like a wide-eyed virgin walking into a
6 military brothel; we've learned how to survive.

7 At any rate, this was a very, very hard thing on
8 us because there was a degree of duress. And we went
9 home kind of beaten. We didn't really -- we didn't want
10 to do anymore Scientology studying. And Julie complained
11 of tiredness and this and that. Julie rarely ever com-
12 plained of anything. But anyway, I saw her beginning to
13 slow down, and by the summer of 1978, she, who was also
14 a very highly trained auditor -- and, also, you must
15 realize both of us were totally persuaded that the source
16 of all illness was mental, except for, say, a broken leg,
17 and the way of curing it is with auditing. This is
18 what -- it's our business.

19 So, during the summer, Julie lost more and more of
20 her energy and had some swelling and some small chest
21 pains and this and that and began to lose her voice. So,
22 I thought, "Well, Flag has the best auditors in the world
23 and should be able to help her out." So, I sent her down
24 here to Clearwater in, I guess it was, October of 1978.

1 We never even really thought about going to see a doctor;
2 that's just not what -- the Scientologist doesn't think
3 about that.

4 Well, they sent her back a week later sicker and
5 she couldn't speak for -- she couldn't even whisper any-
6 more. She'd write notes. So, I tapped on her back,
7 because she was complaining about her chest, and on one
8 side I could hear the sound of -- the hollow sound that
9 you hear when you tap, and the other side, it wasn't
10 hollow. And so, I knew that there wasn't any air on
11 that side.

12 So, we went to see a doctor, and he had her in the
13 hospital very quickly. She was there two days when we
14 were given the report. And what it was was adenocarcin-
15 oma, which was a cancer of the lymph glands of the lungs,
16 and her right lung had totally collapsed, and which this
17 cancer had also infiltrated her throat and paralyzed her
18 vocal cords. And it had progressed to the point where it
19 was totally hopeless. I mean, they didn't even suggest
20 chemotherapy.

21 And they sent her home, and I cared for her for
22 ten days. And she died in my arms. And I began to think
23 a little bit about this type of thing at that point.

24 This type of thing isn't too easy to say, but I

1 think that it's important that somebody say it. And
2 this is what is taught the professional Scientologist.
3 And by following the instructions and following what we
4 work very hard to learn, it cost my wife her life. She
5 may have died anyway; we don't know. If we had taken her
6 to the doctor early, perhaps not. We can only speculate
7 on that.

8 But what I do know is, because of my faith in this
9 man, Ron Hubbard, she didn't have a chance.

10 MR. LeCHER: One or -- just a few questions from
11 me.

12 Do you think the organization can survive a reform
13 movement such as you want to initiate?

14 MR. McKEE: The organization that you have heard
15 about could not possibly survive a reform movement.

16 MR. LeCHER: What percentage of the field people
17 feel like you do?

18 MR. McKEE: I would say ninety-five percent.

19 MR. LeCHER: How would you describe the people that
20 are left at Flag now, which is Clearwater, left running
21 the organization, the Church?

22 Are they the --

23 MR. McKEE: I can describe them all right; I just
24 don't want to get sued.

1 MR. LeCHER: Are they the old-timers like you --

2 MR. McKEE: No.

3 MR. LeCHER: -- that spent their -- half their life
4 or virtually their entire life with them, or are they the
5 younger people that are --

6 MR. McKEE: They're immature, ignorant, brainwashed
7 religious zealots. That's my personal opinion.

8 MR. LeCHER: Commissioners.

9 Yes, ma'am.

10 MRS. GARVEY: Is there anything -- you've been
11 hearing the testimony for today -- yesterday?

12 MR. McKEE: Yes.

13 MRS. GARVEY: Is there any single piece of informa-
14 tion that we need to have yet? Or have we collected --
15 have we asked all the right questions? Is everything
16 clearly out in the open now?

17 MR. McKEE: I think you've done a remarkable job
18 of asking the proper questions and getting specific
19 information.

20 The only protest that I personally have - and I'll
21 say this before somebody says I can't - your task is --
22 you have been operating limiting or restricting the hear-
23 ings somewhat because you're discussing a Church and a
24 religion - and you see, I'm a minister of this and I'm

1 trained in it - and it didn't become religious or
2 spiritual until it was necessary organizationally to
3 gain First Amendment protection in the 1960's. Religion
4 had nothing to do with it and still has nothing to do
5 with it, in fact.

6 MRS. GARVEY: Even though you consider yourself a
7 minister?

8 MR. McKEE: Yes, I'm a minister of the Church.

9 Look, in order to do that, I had to very carefully
10 sort out what is a minister; it's one who cares, and I
11 care for people. And so, I think I could qualify.

12 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hatchett.

13 MR. HATCHETT: No.

14 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Shoemaker.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. McKee, the incident you des-
16 cribed last December, you said that that was prompted
17 by individuals such as yourself, demanding that that
18 meeting be held?

19 MR. McKEE: That's correct. It was called by two
20 individuals who are field Scientologists, not Church
21 members.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: Are -- approximately, how many of
23 the field members attended that meeting?

24 MR. McKEE: Well, we started out with about fifty

1 on the first day - which was supposed to be a two-day
2 meeting - and by the fifth day, there were about two
3 hundred there.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: These were all -- from all over the
5 entire country that were expressing your concerns about
6 the way that the operation at Flag was being carried out?

7 MR. McKEE: All over the United States, Canada,
8 Mexico, Great Britain, and South Africa, yes. It was
9 video taped by the Guardian's Office complete -- or by
10 the Sea Organization completely.

11 MR. SHOEMAKER: What happened to the video tapes?

12 MR. McKEE: And those tapes exist somewhere.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did -- was there any type of change
14 that occurred after -- from that meeting?

15 MR. McKEE: Well, the highest officials showed up
16 on the sixth day, and they didn't want any further
17 comment. They, essentially, told us what we were going
18 to be doing. I made the mistake, from their viewpoint,
19 an organizational mistake of standing up and speaking
20 anyway. And so, I was very quickly after that declared
21 to be a Suppressive Person.

22 They implied some promises that there might be
23 some changes with -- and made one specific promise which
24 was broken two weeks later.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: You were declared a public person --
2 Suppressive Person after standing up and making your
3 feelings known?

4 MR. McKEE: That's correct.

5 They also declared -- the date of the meeting was
6 the first week in December of last year, and I was
7 declared, I think, the second week of January.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did they notify you of this? Or
9 how did you find out that you were considered a Suppres-
10 sive Person?

11 MR. McKEE: When the US Guardian people came and
12 gave me the piece of paper -- laid the piece of paper on
13 the table and said they'd like to handle me.

14 MR. SHOEMAKER: And from that point, what was your
15 response?

16 MR. McKEE: Well, handle meant that I had to recant
17 and apologize for everything I did, and I didn't have
18 anything to apologize for. So, I said, "You're going to
19 have to take your best shot because, not only am I out
20 but so are my groups."

21 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, with your leaving, were there
22 a number of others such as yourself that have also left
23 the Church on that basic --

24 MR. McKEE: I had -- I ran two missions, was the

1 Director for two missions in Connecticut of a total of
2 about fifty active people, people that would come two or
3 three times a week. Every single individual and every
4 staff member left with me.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: In your two missions?

6 MR. McKEE: Yes.

7 And my friends in Rochester also left.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. McKee, the -- I'm sure you've
9 heard described over the last few days terrible situations
10 relating to health conditions.

11 MR. McKEE: Yes.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: Are you -- do you have any first-
13 hand knowledge relating to --

14 MR. McKEE: Not firsthand knowledge; I've heard
15 the stories.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: What --

17 MR. McKEE: I haven't seen it.

18 I saw it on the Apollo; I was on the ship. And I
19 saw the conditions on the ship; it was inhuman.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: Am I to understand that those types
21 of conditions did not exist where you were in Connecticut
22 or --

23 MR. McKEE: Oh, no. We didn't -- no.

24 See, in the Church of Scientology like Boston, New

1 York, or the Flag Land Base are Churches of Scientology.
2 We are Church of Scientology Mission of New London,
3 Connecticut, Church of Scientology Mission of.

4 I am the president of the corporation, and there
5 are no members of the corporation that are not members
6 of the group. It's a franchise group. It's like
7 Connecticut's McDonald's franchise.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: You had indicated that you had
9 problems off and on by the Guardian's Office.

10 Are you familiar -- or aware of any -- with firsthand
11 knowledge in which they've attempted to obtain auditing
12 files from you for use?

13 MR. MCKEE: Well, yes, I -- in relation to the
14 extraction of information for nefarious purposes, I do
15 not have any firsthand information.

16 I always assumed that no one would ever dare touch
17 a confessional folder. I wouldn't -- since I heard that,
18 which was not too long ago, I refused to send any folders.

19 MRS. GARVEY: You mean, you did previously?

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: You were before this?

21 MR. MCKEE: Oh, yes.

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: And you sent those to Clearwater?

23 MR. MCKEE: Oh, yes, many, many.

24 I really -- I have a very hard time believing

1 anybody would do that.

2 MR. LeCHER: Do the field people -- are they
3 aware --

4 MR. McKEE: The confessions of people are guar-
5 anteed.

6 MR. LeCHER: -- of all the dirty tricks?

7 MR. McKEE: No. There is a gradual awareness
8 creeping in.

9 You have to realize that the information within
10 the Scientology network is very restrictive. Not many
11 people even read newspapers and, if they do, we're
12 taught that this is only enemy attack. And it's really
13 remarkable.

14 MR. LeCHER: You were rather isolated, then, and
15 knew none of this existed?

16 MR. McKEE: No, other than what our Connecticut --

17 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

18 MR. McKEE: We're not that isolated. We're just
19 not quite that naive, maybe.

20 MR. LeCHER: Do you have a copy of the paper
21 declaring you a Suppressive Person?

22 MR. McKEE: I don't think I have it with me.

23 MR. LeCHER: But if we ask for it, could we get a
24 copy of it?

1 MR. McKEE: Absolutely.

2 MR. LeCHER: Gentlemen on my left.

3 MR. BERFIELD: Where was the meeting held?

4 MR. McKEE: Where?

5 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

6 MR. McKEE: At the Sand Castle. It's one of the
7 hotels owned by the Sea Org.

8 MR. CALDERBANK: What made you believe in the LRH
9 technology? You were a good minister and an upstanding
10 minister in the Church all the way up until a few months
11 ago for over, I guess, twenty years --

12 MR. LeCHER: Twenty-four years.

13 MR. CALDERBANK: -- twenty-four years.

14 What made you believe in it?

15 MR. McKEE: Well, I could pass it off as stupidity,
16 but the fact of the matter was that I had been training as an
17 engineer. And the book, Dianetics, has a very logical
18 development of the subject, and that appealed to my
19 thought process very much. And the thing it promised,
20 which -- what I wanted, being only a so-so student, was
21 a higher IQ.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: They guaranteed you that?

23 MR. McKEE: Yes.

24 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever consider L. Ron

1 Hubbard's background, the promises held out? You were
2 an engineer. Did you believe him more because he was a
3 nuclear physicist?

4 MR. McKEE: Well, I never bit on that one because
5 I do know a little bit about nuclear physics and mathe-
6 matics. But I rendered the man some poetic license.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: And my last question is: Do you
8 think the belief in the technology would be hindered if
9 this Flag Base was put under any type of financial
10 scrutiny?

11 MR. McKEE: That the technology would be hindered?

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Yes.

13 MR. McKEE: Absolutely not.

14 What little there is workable to it, which really
15 isn't very much, would be all they would have left. And
16 it would be a tremendous favor if that's all they could
17 do.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: You mean, that instead -- or, in
19 fact, it might help this thread or belief in this tech-
20 nology if there was some kind of financial controls?

21 MRS. GARVEY: For financial --

22 MR. McKEE: No. I'd --

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Strike that. Financial scrutiny.

24 MR. McKEE: In my opinion, at this point in time,

1 not only will Scientology no longer spread, it has
2 stopped spreading about four years ago. By my observa-
3 tion - and I've observed quite a number of other missions,
4 my own, and orgs. - it's shrinking rapidly.

5 And I think that if the idea of financial scrutiny
6 is viable - and I think it would also be allowed by law,
7 corporate law - that the funds are handled as prescribed
8 by law for non-profit corporations -- were that done,
9 all they could do over there is service people.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: And that would actually help?

11 MR. MCKEE: It would help the people. It would
12 help the people, but the little neo-Nazi types wouldn't
13 have anything to do.

14 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

15 Mr. Berfield.

16 MR. BERFIELD: No.

17 MR. LeCHER: Do you have any other witnesses?

18 MR. FLYNN: No.

19 What I'd like to do at this point, quickly -- this
20 is very vital to Mr. McKee's testimony and to everything
21 else in this case.

22 If we could put on the -- I mentioned at the outset
23 in my opening the decree in the case of the United States
24 v. Article or Device. The case, as I said, came down in

1 1971, and judgment was entered in 1972. At that time,
2 after the Scientologists had lost two jury trials with
3 regard to, basically, all the issues we've talked about
4 here - the medical issues - the court required -- if we
5 could go down to number three.

6 The court issued the following order, which is still
7 in effect and has always been in effect since 1972, and
8 it says: "Any and all items of written, printed, or
9 graphic matter which directly or indirectly refers to the
10 E-Meter or to Dianetics and/or Scientology and/or audit-
11 ing or processing shall not be further used or distributed
12 unless and until the items shall bear the following
13 prominent printed warning permanently affixed to said
14 item on the outside front cover or on the title page in
15 letters no smaller" --

16 MRS. GARVEY: No. That's the wrong one.

17 MR. HATCHETT: That's the wrong one.

18 MR. FLYNN: -- "than eleven-point type -- than
19 eleven-point leaded type."

20 Just bring it down -- the other way.

21 I've just read from number three: "Any and all
22 items of written."

23 And then there's the warning, which is supposed to
24 be in eleven-point leaded type on the cover page or on

1 the title page: "The device known as the Hubbard Electro-
2 meter or E-Meter used in auditing, a process of Scien-
3 tology and Dianetics, is not medically or scientifically
4 useful for the diagnosis, treatment, or prevention of
5 any disease. It is not medically or scientifically
6 capable of improving the health or bodily functions of
7 anyone."

8 That's what the court ordered in 1972. And within
9 the last forty-eight hours, we have purchased a couple of
10 publications from the Fort Harrison Hotel, which have
11 already been introduced in evidence, and one of them is
12 the book, Dianetics. And nowhere in that book does that
13 warning appear.

14 There is a little -- "To the reader," which you
15 can barely read, which discusses Dianetics as some type
16 of a religious philosophy. And, also, the book, All
17 About Radiation, by a Nuclear Physicist and a Medical
18 Doctor -- also, the warning is not affixed in that pub-
19 lication.

20 So, I will put the judgment into evidence.

21 MR. LeCHER: Would you say they are in violation
22 of the court orders?

23 MR. FLYNN: That's correct.

24 MR. LeCHER: The '72. court order?

1 MR. FLYNN: That's correct.

2 MR. LeCHER: Within the State of Florida, the city,
3 or the county, who should be made aware of that informa-
4 tion, what agency?

5 MR. FLYNN: Mayor, it could range from the Secre-
6 tary of State, dealing with the Charitable Corporations
7 Division, the State's Attorney General, the Pinellas
8 County State's Attorney General, the Pinellas County
9 Consumer Protection Department, and if there was a
10 Consumer Protection Department in the City of Clearwater,
11 they could enforce it, also.

12 And the next exhibit is an exhibit, entitled
13 "Scientology Operations in Clearwater," which is several
14 hundred pages of Guardian's Office activities against
15 your former mayor, Mayor Cazares, including Operation
16 Tacoless, Operation Speedy Gonzales, Operation Keeler I,
17 Operation Keeler II - some of these things you've
18 probably read about in the newspaper - as well as Pro-
19 ject Normandy, the first page of which states: "Pro-
20 ject Information. The major purpose of this project is
21 to obtain enough data on the Clearwater area to be able
22 to determine what groups and individuals B 1 will need
23 to penetrate and handle in order to establish area con-
24 trol."

1 And then Operating Targets are just about every
2 major organization in the City of Clearwater.

3 And the other -- the last exhibit is simply -- or
4 the next to the last exhibit is a collection of documents
5 involving, basically, how to commit criminal operations.

6 And then we will be entering into evidence, approxi-
7 mately, ten to twelve affidavits of various individuals
8 that corroborate the testimony, and in some degree add
9 to in some degree of some of what you heard, including
10 the Affidavit of Tonja Burden, who was a Sea Org. member
11 at the age of thirteen to the age of seventeen; she spent
12 two and-a-half years in Clearwater. During this time
13 she received no education, as the affidavit states. She
14 worked sixteen to eighteen hours a day, between the ages
15 of fifteen and seventeen, coding and decoding telexes
16 for some of those operations and other criminal opera-
17 tions going on in the United States.

18 Those codes were double- and triple-coded in the
19 Owl Code, the Eagle Code, and codes of similar type. So,
20 she was coding and decoding, and she didn't even know
21 what she was coding.

22 And she also -- she ended up in the RPF, and she
23 describes conditions in the RPF, some of which you've
24 heard here today. She describes an individual chained

1 to the boiler in the Fort Harrison Hotel; she describes
2 conditions on the ship; and she generally describes what
3 the Guardian's Office did to her when she escaped from
4 the Fort Harrison, went back to Las Vegas, was kidnapped,
5 taken to California, told to pick up the cans, the
6 E-Meter, and was subjected to an intensive security
7 check, during which period of time she signed legal
8 releases to L. Ron Hubbard, Mary Sue Hubbard, the Church
9 of Scientology, waivers, admitted that it was all her
10 misconduct, and that she owed the Church of Scientology
11 sixty-three thousand dollars.

12 MR. LeCHER: Is she still a minor?

13 MR. FLYNN: No. She's now about twenty-two years
14 old.

15 MR. LeCHER: At that point, was she still a minor?

16 MR. FLYNN: Correct.

17 And the individuals that are now running the Church
18 of Scientology were Sea Org. members of her age that
19 grew up with her with L. Ron Hubbard, in the age of
20 twenty-one, twenty-two years of age.

21 And there are many other affidavits here that per-
22 tain to various subjects, including a widow, Peggy Baer,
23 from whom in two weeks they got thirty-three thousand
24 dollars shortly after her husband died - she was

1 targeted - and similar types of items.

2 We'll mark all of those affidavits.

3 At this point in time, we'll wait to hear from
4 Scientology.

5 MR. LeCHER: Well, ladies and gentlemen, we thank
6 you for being with us for four days. We will be waiting
7 for the Scientologists, as you will be, Monday.

8 I wonder -- as I said earlier, before these hear-
9 ings started, that it's not the big city fighting this
10 small organization. It's little old Clearwater that's
11 trying to defend itself against a worldwide organization
12 that's taking in over a million dollars a day in
13 Clearwater.

14 Thank you for staying with us.

15 This meeting is adjourned.

16 (A copy of the Organization Chart
17 for the Church of Scientology was
18 marked as Exhibit No. 53, as of
19 this date;

20 A document, pertaining to the use
21 of files, was marked as Exhibit No.
22 54, as of this date;

23 Documents, pertaining to the use of
24 auditing information, were marked
as Exhibit No. 55, as of this date;

A copy of the Judgment in the Arti-
cle or Device case was marked as
Exhibit No. 56, as of this date;

1 Documents, under the title of "Scien-
2 tology Operations in Clearwater,"
3 were marked as Exhibit No. 57, as
4 of this date;

5 Documents, pertaining to how to do
6 criminal operations, were marked as
7 Exhibit No. 58, as of this date;

8 Affidavits were marked as Exhibit
9 No. 59, as of this date.)

10 (Whereupon, the hearing was adjourned
11 until Monday, May 10, 1982, at 9:00
12 a.m.)

13 *****
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24

1 CERTIFICATION
2

3 I, Karen E. Rizman, a certified court reporter and
4 Notary Public, do hereby certify that the foregoing
5 hearing transcript of the City of Clearwater Commission
6 Hearings Re: The Church of Scientology, pages 4 through
7 420, is a true and accurate transcription of my dictated
8 tape recordings of the proceedings taken at the Clear-
9 water City Hall, Clearwater Florida, on Saturday, May
10 8, 1982.
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24

Karen E. Rizman
Karen E. Rizman

